FIRST WELSH READER & WRITER.

ARDVA · QVÆ · PVLCRA

anV
15041
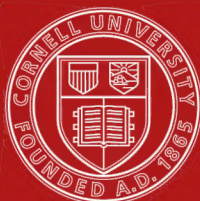
PARALLEL GRAMMAR SERIES

EDITED BY

E. A. SONNENSCHEIN, D.LITT., OXON.

Professor of Classics and Dean of the Faculty of Arts in the University of Birmingham

WELSH

First Welsh Reader and Writer

Being Exercises in Welsh

Based on Anwyl's Welsh Grammar

BY

EDWARD ANWYL, M.A.

Professor of Welsh and Comparative Philology in the University College of Wales, Aberystwyth; Chairman of the Central Welsh Board for Intermediate Education

AND

REV. M. H. JONES, B.A.

Tutor at the Trevecca College, Talgarth

PREFACE

At the request of the Publishers of my Welsh Grammar I have now much pleasure, through the collaboration of my friend and former pupil, the Rev. M. H. Jones, B.A., in publishing a companion volume of Welsh Exercises. The great aim of my Welsh Grammar was the presentation of the distinctive features of the Welsh language, interpreted in the light of its historical development, whereas in earlier text-books Modern Welsh had been largely interpreted through the categories of English and other grammars. It is pleasing to note that the older unscientific methods of regarding the language are now gradually vanishing, and it is to be hoped that the present volume of exercises will not only be useful from a practical point of view, but that it will also serve to make clearer still the distinctive structure of the Welsh tongue. In bringing out this volume of exercises, which is the joint work of the Rev. M. H. Jones and myself, I desire to acknowledge in the most cordial terms the admirable help which his co-operation has given me.

E. ANWYL.

Aberystwyth,

1909.

CONTENTS

FIRST WELSH READER AND WRITER.

INTRODUCTORY.

THESE Introductory Notes and Exercises are mainly intended for students who have no speaking knowledge of Welsh.

The student should first of all read the paragraphs referred to in the Grammar, and then read aloud or write the exercises. Only the most easy and essential sections of the Grammar are dealt with at first, and these will be graded in the order of their difficulty, so that the student will be able to read with proper articulation and accent any passage of ordinary Welsh prose, before he begins the exercises on the different Parts . of Speech.

In the Vocabularies only the most frequently used words are selected and their meanings are inserted in brackets after them.

I. THE WELSH ALPHABET. ITS SYMBOLS AND SOUNDS.

The pronunciation of the Welsh vowels, consonants and diphthongs is taught by means of English equivalents.

Read and learn §§ **4, 5 and 7 of the Grammar,** then try the following Exercises :

Note 1. That every sound-symbol in every Welsh word must be sounded.

Note 2. That every sound-symbol in Welsh (except **Y, see § 8 Gram.**) has always the same sound.

Note 3. That B, D, H (always aspirated), L, M, N, O (long ō or short ŏ), P, R (clearly trilled), S (always the sharp sibilant), and T have the same sound in Welsh as in English.

Exercise 1.

Read aloud the following words :—

Bōd (*to be*), Bōn (*a stump*), Bōst (*a boasting*), Dō (*yes*), Dōl (*meadow*), Dōr (*door*), Dōs (*go*), Hŏn (*this,* fem.), Lōn (*lane*), Mōn (*Anglesey*), Mōr (*sea*), Nōd (*mark*), Nōs (*night*), Ōl (*trace*), ŏs (*if*), Pōb (*all, every*), Sōn (*rumour*), Tŏn (*wave*), Tōn (*tune*).

Note 4. That the vowels A, E, I, O, U, W, Y have both long and short sounds. **See Table 7 (a) Grammar.**

(N.B. In the first few Exercises long and short vowels will be marked   and ˘ respectively).

Exercise 2.   On the Vowels.

Read aloud the following words :—

Măm (*mother*), tād (*father*), bād (*boat*), dăl (*hold*), māb (*son*), măn (*place*), năm (*fault*), dā (*good*), nā (*no*), Pāb (*the Pope*), păm (*why* ?), tăl (*tall*), tāl (*payment*), tān (*fire*), tăn (*under*), sāl (*poor*).

Nēb (*no one*), nĕn (*roof*), pĕn (*head*), nēs (*nearer*), mēr (*marrow*), sēr (*stars*), hĕr (*challenge*), dĭm (*nothing*), mūd (*dumb*), mīn (*edge*), mĭs (*month*), mūr (*stone wall*), nĭd (*not*), Sūl (*Sunday*), dūr (*steel*), pūr (*pure*), sūr (*sour*), tīr (*land*), īs (*below*).

Dwl (*dull*), mw̄n (*ore*), pw̄l (*blunt*), pw̆n (*pack*), sw̆m (*sum*), dw̄r (*water*), tw̄r (*tower*).

Bȳd (*world*), bȳs (*finger*), dȳn (*man*), tȳb (*opinion*), tȳn (*tight*), bȳr (*short*). **See Note 1 § 8 Gram.**

Note 5. That I and W are used not only as vowels but as consonants, as in the following examples :—Iā (*ice*), iăr (*hen*), iawn (*just, right*), Iesu (*Jesus*), wele (*behold*), gwynt (*wind*), gwās (*servant*). **See § 11, Note 6 Gram.**

Note 6. That the consonants C, F, G have different sounds in Welsh from those represented by the same symbols in English. **See Table 7 (b) Gram.**

Exercise 3.

Read aloud the following words :—

(*Note that C has the sound of K in each case*), Cōd (*bag*),

cād (*battle*), căm (*step, crooked*), cān (*song*), cār (*kinsman*), cās (*hatred*), cūl (*narrow*), cūr (*stroke*), cw̆m (*dale*), cw̄n (*dogs*), ăc (*and*), năc (*nor*).

(F *has always the sound of* V). Fĕl (*as*), dōf (*tame*), Nāf (*Lord*), nēf (*heaven*), sēf (*namely*), sāf (*stand thou*), tw̄f (*growth*).

(G *is always hard as in* good). Gw̄r (*husband*), gw̆n (*I know*), ăg (*with*), pīg (*beak*), mw̄g (*smoke*), gw̄g (*frown*).

7. The Digraphs Ch, Dd, Ff, Ng, Ll, Ph, Th have only one simple sound although written in complex form. **See Table § 7 (b) Gram.**

Dd, Ng, Ngh, Mh, Nh, are found initially only in words that have undergone Initial Mutation.

EXERCISE 4.

Read aloud the following words :—

Chwănt (*hunger*), chwāer (*sister*), chwēch (*six*), chwĕrw (*bitter*), chwī (*you*), chwȳs (*sweat*), chwĭlio (*to seek*), bāch (*little*), bōch (*cheek*), mōch (*pigs*), sāch (*sack*), sȳch (*dry*), cw̄ch (*boat*), cōch (*red*), iāch (*healthy*), bēdd (*grave*), sēdd (*seat*), dȳdd (*day*), būdd (*profit*), mōdd (*manner*), sȳdd (*is*), hēdd (*peace*).

Ffā (*beans*), ffăfr (*favour*), ffău (*den*), fflăm (*flame*), ffōl (*foolish*), ffŏn (*staff*), ffŏrdd (*way*), ffōs (*ditch*), ffrōen (*nostril*), ffurfăfen (*firmament*), ffw̆rn (*oven*), ffȳdd (*faith*), ffȳnnon (*spring, well*), cŏffa (*memory*).

Mw̄ng (*mane*), tȳngu (*to swear*), tang-nĕf-edd (*peace*), Llāw (*hand*), llādd (*to kill*), llăis (*voice*), llăn (*church-yard*), llăwen (*happy*), llăwn (*full*), llăwr (*floor*), llēch (*slate*), llĕdr (*leather*), llēf (*voice*), llĭw (*colour*), llō (*calf*), llŏnydd (*quiet*), llŏsgi (*to burn*), llŭdw (*ashes*), llūn (*figure, shape*), llw̆m (*bare*), llȳm (*sharp*), llw̄yn (*wood*), llȳn (*lake*), llȳs (*court*), dăll (*blind*), llȳfn (*smooth*), căll (*wise*), hȳll (*ugly*).

Fy mhĕn (*my head*), fy mhrŏfiad (*my experience*).

Fy nhād (*my father*), fy nhăith (*my journey*), fy nhĕlyn (*my harp*), fy nhĕulu (*my family*), ei phĕn (*her head*), Pharisēad (*Pharisee*), cŏrph (*body*), prŏphwyd (*prophet*).

Rhāff (*rope*), Rhăgfyr (*December*), rhăgor (*more*),

rhăi (*some*), rhi-ĕ-ni (*parents*), Rhŭf-ain (*Rome*), rhw̄yd
(*net*), rhw̌ystr (*hindrance*), rhy̌fel (*war*). Ei thād (*her
father*), By̌th (*ever*), iăith (*language*), mĕthu (*to fail*),
nȳth (nest), pēth (*thing*), sāeth (*arrow*), cāth (*cat*).

Fy nghân (*my song*), fy nghalon (*my heart*), yng Nghy-
mru (*In Wales*).

N.B.   Welsh vowels and diphthongs are never long except
in certain words of one syllable, and in the accented ending—
hād.

8.   Study § **15 Gram.** on the DIPHTHONGS.

EXERCISE 5.

Read aloud the following words :—

Māe (*there is*), trāed (*feet*), tăith (*journey*), dău (*two*),
ăur (*gold*), brăwd (*brother*), llāw (*hand*), ĕira (*snow*),
dĕugain (*forty*), llēw (*lion*), mĕwn (*in*), ōen (*lamb*), ōer
(*cold*), cnŏi (*to bite*), ffŏwch (*flee*), nĭwl (*fog*), by̌w (*live*),
Dŭw (*God*), mw̄y (*more*), bw̄yd (*food*).

9.   THE ACCENT. **See §§ 23-25 Gram.** Note that the almost
invariable rule in Welsh is to place the accent on the *last
syllable but one* of the word : and if a syllable be added to a
word, the accent is moved in accordance with this rule.   Con-
trast this with the usual practice in English, which keeps the
accent on the root syllable of the word, whatever prefixes or
affixes are added.   For example, barn (*judgment*), bárnwr
(*judge*), barnásom (*we judged*), barnedígaeth (*judgment*).

EXERCISE 6.

Pronounce the following words, taking care to accent the
penultimate syllable in each case :—

A-chub (*to save*), a-chub-wr (*one who saves*), a-chub-ed-ig
(*one who is saved*) ; ad-rodd (*to relate*), ad-rodd-iad (*recita-
tion*), ad-rodd-iad-au (*recitations*) ; hawdd (*easy*), an-
hawdd (*difficult*), an-hawdd-af (*most difficult*) ;   arf
(*weapon*), arf-og (*armed*), arf-og-aeth (*armour*); byw (*alive*),
byw-iol (*lively*), byw-iog-rwydd (*liveliness*) ; go-leu (*light*),
go-leu-o (*to give light*), go-leu-ad-au (*lights*) ; go-sod (*to
place*), go-sod-iad (*statement*), go-sod-ed-ig (*being placed*) ;
go-sod-ed-ig-aeth (*enactment made*), go-sod-ed-ig-aeth-

au (*enactments*) ; marw (*to die*), mar-waidd (*deadly*), mar-weidd-io (*to mortify*), mar-wol-aeth (*death*), mar-wol-aeth-u (*to cause to die*).

10. The most important *exceptions to the Rule of Accent* are the following :—

(*a*) Words accented on the *last* syllable, viz.,
   1. Verb-nouns ending in -au, -hau, -eu, and -oi. **See §§ 26, 224, 236 Gram.**
   2. Noun derivatives in -hād.
   3. Emphatic Personal Pronouns which are formed by reduplication. **See §§ 28, 132 c Gram.**
   4. Words beginning in *ys*- and *ym*-. **See § 27 Gram.**
   5. Compound Prepositions. **See §§ 29, 298 Gram.**

EXERCISE 7.

Pronounce the following words :—

Glan-hau (*to clean*), cryf-hau (*to strengthen*), par-hau (*to continue*), can-iat-au (*to allow*), di-leu (*to blot out*), os-goi (*to avoid*), coff-hād (*remembrance*), par-hād (*continuance*) ; my-fī (*I*), chwy-chwī (*you*), hwynt-hw̄y (*they*) ; y-stŏrm (*storm*), y-stēn (*a can*) ; y-stōr (*a store*), ym-lādd (*to tire one's self*), ym-drŏi (*to loiter*) ; ger-brŏn (*in front of*), y̆-mȳsg (*among*), dra-chĕfn (*again*).

(*b*) **Note the peculiarities mentioned in §§ 30, 33 ; 31, 32 ; 34, 35 ; 36, 37 Gram.**

EXERCISE 8.

Pronounce the following words :—

Apēl (*appeal*), heresi (*heresy*), philosophi (*philosophy*) ; Saesoneg (*English*), meddwdod (*drunkenness*), gwelwlas (*pale grey*), marwnad (*elegy*), gwaywffon (*spear*), banadl (*broom*), cenedl (*nation*), bonheddig (*gentlemanly*), oherwydd (*because*), unarhugain (*one and twenty*), rhagfarn (*prejudice*), morfa (*a moor*), dad-lwytho (*unload*), rhagarweiniad (*introduction*).

11. INITIAL MUTATIONS.—The Englishman's chief difficulty in mastering the Welsh language lies with the Initial Muta-

tions of certain words in sentences or breath-groups. But if the following five sections (*a* to *e*) be well mastered, the student will find that all these changes are subject to rules which never vary.

(*a*) Only words beginning with P, T, C. ; B, D, G. ; Ll, Rh, and M in their Radical or Dictionary form are mutated. Words beginning with Chw, Ff, H, N and S are never mutated. All the other consonants are Derivative, i.e., no words beginning with them are to be found in a vocabulary ; for they are only written in certain phrases in their mutated form.

(*b*) For the conditions that produce Initial Mutations, **see Gram. §§ 48, 49, 57.** The changes depend entirely upon the sense in which the word is used, or upon the word immediately preceding it.

1. The *Radical* or unchanged form of the word is used, for example :—
   - (*a*) In the first word in a sentence, except in address or in the case of certain adverbial expressions.
   - (*b*) After such words as Ein (*our*), Eich (*your*).
   - (*c*) For Masculine nouns following the article Y (*the*) and the Numeral Un (*one*) : as Y tŷ (*the house*), Un peth (*one thing*). (Note that Feminine nouns are softened or mutated after Y and Un, except in the case of initial Ll and Rh.
2. The *Voiced or Soft Mutation* arose in the old speech of Britain from the vowel-flanked position of the initial letter. It is found, for example, after such words as Dy (*thy*), Ei (*his*), etc. **See Gram. § 65 and Type A, pp. 77 and 78.**
3. The *Spirant or Aspirate Mutation* occurs after such words as Ei (*her*), tri (*three*), chwē (*six*), â (*with*), a (*and*), etc. **See Gram. § 66 and Type B, p. 79.**
4. The *Nasal Mutation* is written after Fy (*my*), yn (*in*), pum (*five*), saith (*seven*), etc. **See Gram. § 67 and Type C, p. 79.**

(*c*) *The Mutations of* P, T, C. **See Gram. § 60.**

Words beginning with P, T, C undergo 3 *changes each*.
- (1) Radical P may be mutated into Soft B, Spirant Ph, Nasal Mh.
- (2) Radical T may be mutated into Soft D, Spirant Th, Nasal Nh.
- (3) Radical C may be mutated into Soft G, Spirant Ch, Nasal Ngh.

EXERCISE 9.

I. Write Ein (*our*) before the words—cadair (*chair*), penelin (*elbow*), teml (*temple*). Write Dy (*thy*) before the words —pabell (*tent*), ceffyl (*horse*), tad (*father*). Write Ei (*his*) before the words—canwyll (*candle*), pobl (*people*), torth (*loaf*). Write Fy (*my*) before the words—ci (*dog*), telyn (*harp*), pen (*head*). Write Ei (*her*) before the words—clust (*ear*), trysor (*treasure*), pethau (*things*). Write Tri (*three*) before the words—cyfaill (*friend*), tôn (*tune*), pererin (*pilgrim*).

II. Translate into English :—
Ei thref (*home*). Fy nghadair (*chair*). Dy borth (*gate*). Ein pobl (*people*). Ei chath (*cat*). Fy mhlwyf (*parish*). Dy geiniog (*penny*). Ein castell (*castle*). Tri tharw (*bull*). Ei phechod (*sin*). Fy nhafod (*tongue*). Dy drwyn (*nose*).

III. Translate into Welsh :—
Thy cross (*croes*). My memory (*côf*). Her sleep (*cwsg*). Our sword (*cleddyf*). Thy father (*tad*). My tent (*pabell*). Her elbow (*penelin*). Our fire (*tân*). His shield (*tarian*). Three wells (*pydew*). Thy bush (*perth*). My family (*teulu*). Her loaf (*torth*). Our price (*pris*).

(*d*) *The Mutations of* B, D, G. **See Gram. § 60.**

The Radicals B, D. G, should not be confounded with the mutated B, D, G which form the Voiced inflection of P, T, C. So if the student meets, in a sentence, with a strange Welsh word beginning with B, D or G, he must look for it in the dictionary under B and P, D and T, G and C respectively before abandoning the search. The same holds true of words beginning with Ch, M, and N, as we shall see later on.

Words beginning with B, D, G undergo 2 *changes each.*
  (1) Radical B may be mutated into Soft F and Nasal M.
  (2) Radical D may be mutated into Soft Dd and Nasal N.
  (3) Radical G may be mutated into Soft (G here being dropped) and Nasal Ng.
The same rules apply to B, D, G as to P, T, C when written in phrases or breath-groups, viz., B, D, G are softened after Ei (*his*), Dy (*thy*) ; they take the nasal mutation after Fy (*my*) ; but retain the Radical form after Ei (*her*), Eu (*their*), A (*and*), and Tri (*three*).

EXERCISE 10.

I.   Write Eu (*their*) before the words—bâd (*boat*), defaid (*sheep*), gelynion (*enemies*).   Write Ei (*his*) before the words—bedd (*grave*), dysgl (*dish*), gwaed (*blood*). Write Ei (*her*) before the words—blodeuyn (*flower*), dant (*tooth*), gair (*word*).   Write Fy (*my*) before the words—bys (*finger*), diolch (*thanks*), gwisg (*dress*). Write Tri (*three*) before the words—bardd (*bard*), diwrnod (*day*), gwr (*man*).

II. Give the Radical or dictionary form of the following words :—

(Note that Y is the article " the " and is followed by the Radical in a Masculine noun, but the Soft or Voiced Mutation in a Feminine noun, except in the case of Ll and Rh.)

Y gath (*the cat :* Fem.).   Y bennod (*the chapter :* fem.). Y gaeaf (*the winter :* masc.).   Y darian (*the shield :* fem.). Y babell (*the tent :* fem.).   Y gloch (*the bell :* fem.). Y gwas (*the servant :* masc.).   Y bwthyn (*the cottage :* masc.).   Y deml (*the temple :* fem.).   Y drws (*the door :* masc.).   Y dref (*the town :* fem.).

III.   Translate into Welsh :—

My table (*bwrdd*).   My finger (*bys*).   My God (*Duw*). Thy boat (*bâd*).   Thy brother (*brawd*).   Thy city (*dinas*). God and (a) man (*dyn*).   Father (*tad*) and brother. Husband (*gwr*) and wife (*gwraig*).   His day (*diwrnod*). His earth (*daear*).   Dog (*ci*) and cat (*cath*).   My wife. My garden (*gardd*).   Thy sheep (*dafad*).   His country

(*gwlad*). Thy hair (*gwallt*). His word (*gair*). Thy work (*gwaith*). His bread (*bara*).

(*e*) *The Mutations of* Ll, Rh, *and* M. **See Gram. § 60.**

Do not confound the Radical M with the M that is the mutation of B. For example, *Mam* (mother) is a word beginning with Radical M, which may undergo a mutation into F, as *Ei fam* (his mother), but *Fy mrawd* (my brother) is an instance where *M* is the Nasal mutation of the Radical B (brawd).

Words beginning with Ll, Rh, and M undergo *only one change each*.

Radical Ll may be mutated into **L** (Voiced). Radical Rh may be mutated into R (Voiced). Radical M may be mutated into F (Spirant).

The Radicals Ll, Rh, and M are mutated into L, R, and F respectively after Ei (*his*), Dy (*thy*). But after Fy (*my*), Ei (*her*), Eu (*their*) they retain the Radical. Note, that whereas Feminine nouns in initial P, T, C, B, D, G are softened after the Article Y (*the*) and numeral Un (*one*), the contrary is true of Ll, Rh, and M, which remain unchanged.

EXERCISE II.

I. Write the following words with Ei (*his*), and Dy (*thy*, before them.

Llaw (*hand*), rhaff (*rope*), mēl (*honey*), llywydd (*ruler*), rhōdd (*gift*), mab (*son*), lliw (*colour*), rhieni (*parents*), melin (*mill*).

II. Translate into English :—

Fy meistr (*master*). Ei merch (*daughter*). Ei ferch. Eu mawl (*praise*). Dy faneg (*glove*). Dy raw (*spade*). Dy lyfr (*book*). Fy rhiain (*maid*). Fy llety (*lodging*). Ei llais (*voice*). Ei lais. Ei rhosyn (*rose*). Ei llythyr (*letter*). Ei modryb (*aunt*). Ei fab (*son*). Eu merched (*daughters*). Eu llysoedd (*courts*). Y llaeth (*milk*). Y rhoddion (*gifts*). Y merlyn (*pony*). Un lleidr (*thief*). Un rhwyf (*oar*). Un mōr (*sea*).

III. Translate into Welsh :—

(Meanings in brackets are given in their dictionary form).

His voice (*llais*). His parents (*rhieni*). His mind

(*meddwl*). Thy ship (*llong*). Thy rose (*rhosyn*). Thy smoke (*mŵg*). The sea (*môr*). One lake (*llyn*). The maiden (*rhiain*). One hammer (*morthwyl*). My book (*llyfr*). My spade (*rhaw*). My glove (*maneg*). Her parents (*rhieni*). Her mother (*mam*). Her colour (*lliw*). Their letter (*llythyr*). Their battle (*rhyfel*). Their field (*maes*).

12. THE PREFIXING OF H TO INITIAL VOWELS. **See Gram. §§ 68–71.** Words whose radical initial is a vowel, have H prefixed to them when following Ei (*her*), ein (*our*), eu (*their*), a'i (*and her*), i'n (*to our*), o'n (*from our*), i'w (*to their*), i'w (*to his or her*), a'n (*and our*), â'n (*with our*), a'u (*and their*). For an explanation of the Postvocalic Possessive Adjectives which are in the above words added to the Conjunction a (*and*) or the Prepositions â (*with*), i (*to*), o (*from*), **see Gram. §§ 141, 142.**

EXERCISE 12.

I. Translate into English :—
Eu hathraw (*teacher*) a'u hiaith (*language*). Ei hiechyd (*health*). Ein Harglwydd (*Lord*). I'w hysgol (*school*). Eu hysgrifen (*writing*). O'n hynys (*island*). Ei hanffawd (*misfortune*), a'i hofn (*fear*). I'n heglwys (*church*). Â'n henwau (*names*).

II. Translate into Welsh :—
Her teacher (*athraw*) and her school (*ysgol*). Our health (*iechyd*). Their ass (*asyn*) and our lamb (*oen*). To their face (*wyneb*). From our soul (*enaid*). Our silver (*arian*) and our gold (*aur*). Their uncle (*ewythr*). Her shoe (*esgid*). To our weapon (*arf*). To his condition (*amod*). With our apple (*afal*). To her answer (*ateb*).

13. ORDER OF WORDS *in a typical Welsh Sentence.*—The student should familiarize himself from the start with some of the outstanding features of Welsh Syntax, and pay particular attention to the following idioms in sentence construction.

(*a*) The Normal Order of words in a Welsh sentence is—**Verb, Subject, Remainder of the Predicate. See Syntax §§ 301-304, Grammar.** It should be noticed that this is contrary to the normal order of an English sentence, where we have the Sub-

ject first and then the Predicate (including the verb, its object
or its complement and the extension).

Compare the following examples given in § **304, Gram.**
with their English equivalents.

Verb.	Subject.	Remainder of Predicate.	Subject.	Verb.	Remainder of Predicate.
Cān	y dyn	—	The man	sings	—
Mae	y dyn	yn frenin	The man	is	a king
,,	,,	yn dda	,, ,,	,,	good
Gwelodd	y dyn	y bachgen	The man	saw	the boy
Rhoddodd	y dyn	lyfr i'r bachgen	The man	gave	a book to the boy
Galwodd	y dyn	ef yn frenin	The man	called	him a king
,,	,, ,,	ef yn dda	,, ,,	,,	him good

(*b*) In Normal Order the Subject noun can usually be known
by the Radical form of its initial letter.   (It is the Feminine
noun following the Article Y (*the*) that forms the exception
by assuming the Voiced Mutation.)   But all Subjects in the
Normal Order can be discovered by their *position*, inasmuch
as they immediately follow the verb which is the first word
in the sentence.

The object of a Transitive Verb is usually recognized by its
Soft or Voiced Mutation and by its position in the third place
from the beginning of the sentence.

Predicate Nouns and Predicate Adjectives following *yn*
always take the Voiced Mutation (except when they begin
with ll or rh).   This Predicative *yn* cannot be translated into
English.

The verb or first word in a sentence always assumes in
its initial consonant the Radical form.   (The only exception
is the nominative of address, which is written with a Voiced
Mutation as Dad trugarog !   (*Merciful Father !*).

(*c*) The Subject, if it be a Pronoun, is usually contained
within the ending of the verb itself ;   when the pronoun that
corresponds to the personal element in the verb is separately
expressed, it is introduced for emphasis only.

Canaf=*I sing*.   Canaf *fi=It is I who sing*.   **See §§ 302
and 316, Gram.**

For a Table of Verbal endings, **see § 208a, Gram.**

For a List of the fully written Personal Pronouns, **see § 132b, Gram.**

(*d*) The Adjective usually *follows* the noun it qualifies in Welsh, as Dyn da (*a good man*). Llyfrau heirdd (*fine books*). **See § 337, Gram.**

(*e*) For the agreement of the Verb and Subject in a sentence of Normal Order, read **§§ 317, 318, Gram.**

Welsh shows a fondness for the 3rd singular verb even when the Subject is plural, so a student accustomed to the agreement of the Subject and its Verb in other languages should pay special attention to this Welsh idiom.

The rule to be applied to a Simple Sentence of Normal Order is this : The verb will be 3rd singular if its Subject be either a Noun (sing. or plural) or a Pronoun other than Personal ; but if the Subject be a Personal Pronoun, the verb will *appear* to agree with its nominative in number and person.

[NOTE : In these cases the pronominal subject is really contained in the verb, and the added pronoun is in apposition with that subject.]

Examples :—

Rhed y dyn o'r golwg (*The man runs out of sight*).
Rhed y dynion o'r golwg (*The men run out of sight*).
Rhed y rhai acw o'r golwg (*Those yonder run out of sight*).
Rhed efe o'r golwg (*He runs out of sight*).
Rhedaf fi o'r golwg (*I run out of sight*).
Rhedwn ni o'r golwg (*We run out of sight*).
Rhedant hwy o'r golwg (*They run out of sight*).

(*f*) English Adverbs ending in *-ly* are translated into Welsh by means of the Predicative *yn* and an Adjective (written with a Voiced mutation, except when it begins with ll or rh). **See §§ 174 and 324 note 4, Gram.**

Examples : happily=*yn ddedwydd* (dedwydd=*happy*), vigorously=*yn egniol*.

THE DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVE OR DEFINITE ARTICLE.

The following Notes and Exercises 13 and 14 are based on §§ **145-147 ; 581 ; 582-589 of the Grammar.**

1. FORM of the Article.   The Definite Article is written in three forms in Welsh, viz., *y, yr,* and *'r.*   These are always translated into *the* in English.   The English Indefinite Article *a* or *an* is not expressed in Welsh.   Hence ' a boy ' =*bachgen,* and ' an apple '=*afal.*

The form *Y* is used before consonants and consonantal *w,*
> as y dyn (*the man*).
>> y wraig (*the woman*).

The form *Yr* is used before vowels, consonantal *i* and the
> aspirate *h,* as yr afal (*the apple*), yr iaith (*the language*),
> yr haul (*the sun*).

The form *'r* is used when the previous word ends in a vowel,
> as Aeth i'r ty gyda'r plant (*He went to the house with the children*).   Yr athraw a'r dosbarth (*The teacher and the class*).   Cerddodd o'r orsaf tua'r dref (*He walked from the station towards the town*).

[NOTE.   This is a survival from the time when *yr* was used before both vowels and consonants.]

2. POSITION of the Article.—The Welsh Article always precedes its noun.

3. MUTATION governed by the Article.—It governs the Voiced or Soft mutation of a Singular *Feminine* noun (except when such nouns begin with Ll or Rh).   **See p. 77.   Type A, Note 7, Gram.** and notes on pp. 6, 8 and 9 on the Mutations in this Exercise Book.

4. The USES of the Article.—The ordinary uses of the Article are the same in Welsh as in other languages.   **See § 581 Gram.**

VOCABULARY I.

NOUNS.

dyn (*man*).
dynes (*woman*).
bachgen (*boy*).
plant (*children*).
asyn (*ass*), m.
ceffyl (*horse*), m.
oen (*lamb*), m.
cae (*field*), m.
môr (*sea*), m.
afon (*river*), f.
ty (*house*), m.
ysgol (*school*), f.
dodrefn (*furniture*), m.
achos (*cause*), m.
buwch (*cow*), f.

VERBS.

pora (3. s. Pres. *he, she or it grazes*).
gwelodd (3. s. Aor. *he saw*).
rhedodd (3. s. Aor. *he ran*).

rhed (3. s. Pres. *he runs*).
gwerthodd (3. s. Aor. *he sold*).
prynodd (3. s. Aor. *he bought*).
mae (y mae)—(3. s. Pres. *there* or *it is*).
yw (3. s. Pres. *is*).

PREPOSITIONS.

yn (*in*).
i (*to*), i'r (*to the*).
o (*from*), o'r (*from the*).
â, ag (*with*) ;
   Write *â* before consonants,
      and *ag* before vowels.
gyda, gydag (*with*).
gyda'r (*with the*).
tua, tuag (*towards*).
tua'r (*towards the*).
ar ol (*after*).

ADVERB.

ynghyd (*together*).

EXERCISE 13.

(*a*) Translate into English :—

1. Gwelodd ddyn a dynes. 2. Gwelodd y dyn a'r ddynes. 3. Rhedodd y bachgen o'r tŷ i'r ysgol. 4. Rhed yr afon tua'r môr. 5. Rhedodd gyda'r plant. 6. Gwerthodd y tŷ, yr ysgol a'r dodrefn. 7. Prynodd y ceffyl, yr asyn a'r oen. 8. Y mae'r oen yn y cae. 9. Beth yw'r achos ? 10. Pora'r fuwch a'r oen ynghyd.

(*b*) Translate into Welsh :—

1. He saw the river and the sea. 2. The man ran after the boy to the school. 3. The woman bought the house and the furniture. 4. He sold the horse and the ass. 5. The lamb and the cow ran into the field. 6. He ran with the children towards the river. 7. The man bought a horse. 8. The boy sold the lamb. 9. He saw the children together in (the) school. 10. There is a field with the house.

5. THE PECULIAR USES OF THE WELSH ARTICLE.—**Read carefully §§ 582–9 in the Grammar.** Note in addition, that nouns which signify titles, dignities and professions usually take the Article in Welsh, as—

Yr Ymherawdwr Nero (*The Emperor Nero*).

Y Tywysog Llewelyn (*Prince Llewelyn*).

Y Deon Howell (*Dean Howell*).

VOCABULARY 2.

NOUNS.

Y Bala (*Bala*), f.

Yr Amwythig (*Shrewsbury*), f.

Yr Aifft (*Egypt*), f.

Yr Eidal (*Italy*), f.

Yr Hafren (*Severn*), f.

Y Drefnewydd (*Newtown*), f.

Yr Iesu (*Jesus*), m.

Y Nadolig (*Christmas*), m.

Y Pasg (*Easter*), m.

Tywysog (*Prince*), m.

brenin (*king*), m.

mab (*son*), m.

tref (*town*), f.

i'r dref (*to town*),

eglwys (*church*), f.

lle (*place*), m.

Duw (*God*), m.

VERBS.

saif (3. s. Pres. *it stands*).

cartrefai (3. s. Past Imperf. *he used to live*).

teithiodd (3. s. Aor. *he travelled*).

wylodd (3. s. Aor. *he wept*).

ganwyd (Aor. Impersonal, *was born*).

gwerthwyd (Aor. Impers. *was sold*).

cerddodd (3. s. Aor. *he walked*).

treuliais (1. s. Aor. *I spent*).

gosodais (1. s. Aor. *I placed*).

gorchfygwyd (Aor. Impers. *was defeated*).

gelwir (Pres. Impers. *is called*)

For a list of verbal endings, see §§ 208 a. and b. Gram.

[NOTE. The use of the article before names of rivers is not an ancient practice in Welsh.]

PREPOSITIONS.

ar (*upon, on*)

tros (*over*)   } See § 288

trwy (*through*)   Gram.

gan (*by*)

ADVERBS.

Wele (*behold*). **See § 600 Gram.**

Adref (*home, towards home*).

NOTE (*a*). Passive verbs, like *gelwir*, take a Predicate-Noun or Predicate-Adjective after them like the verb *Wyf*. **See § 324 Gram.** Gelwir yn Fab (*is called the Son*).

(*b*) When two dependent nouns stand in juxta-position, the second is put in the Genitive Case ; the preposition *of* or the Apostrophe and *'s* of the English corresponding phrase not being needed in Welsh. The first of the dependent nouns cannot take the Article in Welsh, but is, however, to be translated as though defined. **See §
587 Gram.**

Mab y brenin *(the son of the king).*
Mab brenin *(the son of a king).*

(*c*) *Mae* cannot be used for " is " in negative and interrogative sentences. **See § 481 Gram.**

EXERCISE 14.

(*a*) Translate into English :—

1. Saif yr Amwythig ar yr Hafren. 2. Cartrefai Thomas Charles yn y Bala. 3. Teithiodd o'r Aifft i'r Eidal. 4. Wylodd yr Iesu. 5. Ganwyd Crist ar y Nadolig. 6. Rhedodd plant y dyn i'r tŷ. 7. Gwerthwyd dodrefn yr ysgol i'r wraig. 8. Aeth tros yr afon tua'r dref. 9. Rhedodd yr asyn o'r cae tua'r tŷ.

(*b*) Translate into Welsh :—

1. The Severn runs through Shrewsbury. 2. He walked from Newtown to Bala. 3. I spent Easter in Egypt. 4. I placed the boy on the horse. 5. Prince Llewelyn was defeated in 1282 by King Edward. 6. The children are (=*y mae*) in school. 7. He went to town. 8. The man and the woman went to church. 9. The school children ran home.

THE NOUN.

1. KINDS OF NOUNS.—The classification of Nouns in Welsh is the same as that of English, viz., Proper, Common, Abstract and Collective.

Note that there is no need to translate Proper Names in English by Welsh equivalents, unless there are well known forms accepted for them. The few English or foreign names of Persons or Places that have special Welsh equivalents (such as Iago for James or Abertawe for Swansea), will be given in the Vocabularies.

2. CASES OF NOUNS.—In Welsh there are three Cases— Nominative, Accusative and Genitive.

We have already seen in Section 13 (p. 10) that the *Nominative* is the case of the Subject, and that in a sentence of the Normal Order it immediately follows the verb. The *Accusative* is the Case of the Direct Object of a Transitive verb, and always follows the Nominative in a sentence of the Normal Order. In form there is no difference between a Nominative and an Accusative, except that the latter usually takes the Voiced or Soft Mutation. The Accusative in Welsh, moreover, can be governed by a Preposition. The *Genitive* is the case of the *second* of two dependent nouns written in juxtaposition.

e.g., Llais y wlad (*The voice of the country*). (**See Gram.** §§ **74 ; 374–5.** Also Note *b* to Vocab. 2. First Welsh Reader).

Note that the noun in the Genitive case (except where it is clearly attributive) is usually written in the Radical form : e.g., Merch Megan (*Megan's daughter*).

Contrast this with the Adjective after a Noun feminine singular, which is always mutated, e.g., Merch dda (*A good girl*).

3. NUMBER IN WELSH NOUNS.—Study carefully—**Gram.** §§ **75–7 ;** §§ **78–83, 93–8 ;** §§ **85–92.**

The Exercises will follow the above grouping of the paragraphs, and most of the words used in the Vocabulary, will be taken from the examples given in the Grammar.

VOCABULARY 3.

NOUNS.

Adar, aderyn (*birds, bird*), *m.*
blodau, blodeuyn (*flowers, flower*), *m.*
coed, coeden (*trees, tree*), *f.*
derw, derwen (*oaks, an oak*), *f.*
plant, plentyn (*children, a child*), *m.*
ser, seren (*stars*, a *star*), *f.*

bachgen, bechgyn (*boy, boys*), m.
carreg, cerryg (*stone, stones*), *f.*
corff, cyrff (*body, bodies*), *m.*
croen, crwyn (*skin, skins*), *m.*
cyllell, cyllyll (*knife, knives*), *f.*
dafad, defaid (*a sheep, sheep*),*f.*
gwr, gwyr (*man* or *husband, men* or *husbands*), *m.*
llygad, llygaid (*eye, eyes*), *m.*
oen, wyn (*lamb, lambs*), *m.*
sant, saint (*saint, saints*), *m.*
troed, traed (*foot, feet*), *f.*
tŷ, tai (*house, houses*), *m.*

Afon, afonydd (*river, rivers*), *f.*
asyn, asynod (*ass, asses*), *m.*
awr, oriau (*hour, hours*), *f.*
bryn, bryniau (*hill, hills*), *m.*
dyn, dynion (*man, men*), *m.*
eglwys, eglwysi (*church, churches*), *f.*
gair, geiriau (*word, words*), *m.*
gardd, gerddi (*garden, gardens*), *f.*
gwraig, gwragedd (*woman* or *wife, women* or *wives*), *f.*

llaw, dwylaw (*hand, two hands*), *f.*
lle, lleoedd (*place, places*), m.
mab, meibion (*son, sons*), *m.*
môr, moroedd (*sea, seas*), *m.*
milltir, milltiroedd (*mile, miles*), *f.*
nant, nentydd (*brook, brooks*), *f.*
pen, pennau (*head, heads*), *m.*
Protestant, Protestaniaid (*Protestant, Protestants*), *m.*
pysgodyn, pysgod (*fish, fishes*), *m.*

Blwyddyn, blynyddoedd (*year, years*), *f.*
brawd, brodyr (*brother, brothers*), *m.*
bys, bysedd (*finger, fingers*), *m.*
cân, caneuon or caniadau (*song, songs*), *f.*
castell, castelli or cestyll (*castle, castles*), *m.*
ci, cwn (*dog, dogs*), *m.*
cwningen, cwningod (*rabbit, rabbits*), *f.*
dant, dannedd (*tooth, teeth*), *m.*
gwartheg (*cattle*).
merch, merched (*girl* or *daughter, girls* or *daughters*), *f.*
mynydd, mynyddoedd or mynyddau (*mountain, mountains*), *m.*
tref, trefi or trefydd (*town, towns*), *f.*

VOCABULARY 3 *(continued)*—

ADJECTIVE, ETC.
llawer *(many)*.
hefyd *(also)*, conj.

VERBS.
syrthiodd *(fell)*, 3 s. Aor.
sydd *(is)*, 3 s. Pres.
cafwyd *(there were found)*.
clywais *(I heard)*, 1 s. Aor.
tor *(cut)*, Imperative. Na
thor *(Do not cut)*.

See previous vocab. for *gwelodd, aeth, prynodd, teithiodd, cerddodd, rhedodd, rhed, saif, mae, cartrefai, treuliais* and *gosodais*.

PREPOSITIONS, etc. See previous vocab. for *ar, â, ar ol, gan, gyda, i, o, tros, trwy, yn :* and for the Conjunction *a, ac.*

NOTE. Yng Nghymru *(in Wales)*.

EXERCISE 15.

(a) Translate into English :—

1. Gwelodd y plant yr adar. 2. Gosodais goed a blodau yn yr ardd. 3. Y mae defaid ac wyn lawer yn y cae. 4. Saif y plentyn tàn y dderwen. 5. Gwelais ser lawer. 6. Prynodd y gwyr dai, cyllyll, a chrwyn defaid. 7. Mae llygaid y saint ar dŷ Dduw. 8. Syrthiodd carreg ar droed y bachgen.

(b) Translate into Welsh :—

1. The children ran after the sheep. 2. Cut the tree with a knife. 3. The men and the boys used to live in Bala. 4. The child walked into many houses. 5. The boy saw the star. 6. The man bought the stones. 7. Do not cut the flowers. 8. There are sheep in the field.

EXERCISE 16.

(a) Translate into English :—

1. Rhed yr afonydd a'r nentydd i'r môr. 2. Gwelodd y dyn wyr a gwragedd, meibion a merched yn yr ysgolion. 3. Y mae yn y dref dai ac eglwysi, ysgol a chastell hefyd. 4. Clywais gân yr aderyn yn y coed. 5. Cafwyd ar y mynyddoedd, asynod, gwningod a defaid. 6. Gwelodd llygad y bachgen bysgodyn yn yr afon. 7. Y mae yn y corff, draed, dwylaw, llygaid, bysedd a dannedd.

(*b*) Translate into Welsh :—

1. The dogs ran after the cattle. 2. The girls and the boys went to church. 3. He travelled many miles over hills and through rivers. 4. I spent many years in the schools of the Protestants. 5. There are many castles in Wales. 6. Do not cut the flowers with the knife. 7. Brooks run from the hills to the sea.

4. GENDER IN NOUNS.—It is most important that a student of Welsh should not confuse the *grammatical* distinction of nouns into Masculine and Feminine with the *sex* distinction of persons and animals. For, since Welsh has neither neuter nor common gender, the names of even inanimate things must either be Masculine or Feminine.

To discover the Gender of a Welsh Noun study carefully **Gram.** §§ **104–112.**

Note that the gender of the names of sexless things can be determined by their meaning (§ **108**), their form (§§ **109–111**), or by the mutation of the adjective that follows them (§ **112, note 3**).

VOCABULARY 4.

NOUNS.

Brenin, brenhines (*king, queen*).

cyfaill, cyfeilles (*friend*), *m.* and *f.*

dyn, dynes (*man, woman*).

meistr, meistres (*master, mistress*).

Sais, Saesnes (*Englishman, Englishwoman*).

Asyn, asen (*ass*), *m.* and *f.*

bachgen, merch or geneth (*boy, girl*).

brawd, chwaer (*brother, sister*).

ewythr, modryb (*uncle, aunt*).

gwas, morwyn (*servant*), *m.* and *f.*

gwr, gwraig (*husband, wife*).

mab, merch (*son, daughter*).

tad, mam (*father, mother*).

Barddoniaeth (*poetry*), *f.*

blwyddyn (*year*), *f.*

Caer (*Chester*), *f.*

cath (*cat*), *f.*

ceffyl (*horse*), *m.* : *plur.* ceffylau).

caseg (*mare*), *f.* : *plur.* cesyg.

creulondeb (*cruelty*), *m.*

Cymro (*Welshman*), Cymraes, *f.*

Cymru (*Wales*), *f.*

dydd (*day*), *m.*

eryr (*eagle*), *m.*

hwrdd (*ram*), *m.*, dafad (*sheep*).

VOCABULARY 4 (*continued*)—

iar (*hen*), *f.*, ceiliog (*cock*), *m.*

Lloegr (*England*), *f.*

mis (*month*), *m.*

ŵy (*egg*), *m.*; *plur.* wyau (*eggs*).

y Ddyfrdwy (*the Dee*), *f.*

ADJECTIVE.

newydd (*new*).

PRONOUNS.

fy (*my*). **See Gram. § 141.**

dy (*thy*).

VERBS.

anrhydedda (*honour*), Imper.

yw (*is*). Cp. *mae* and *sydd*.
    See Gram. §§ 484–90.

PREPOSITIONS, ETC.

i (*for* as well as *to*, *into*).
    Gram. §§ 385–9.

tàn (*under*). **Gram. § 410.**

mewn (*in*). Cp. *yn*. **Gram.
    §§ 428–35.**

ond (*but*), conjunction.

EXERCISE 17.

(*a*) Translate into English :—

1. Anrhydedda'r brenin. 2. Cartrefai tad a mam y
ferch yn y tŷ newydd. 3. Syrthiodd y gwas tros y
cerryg i'r afon. 4. Sais yw y brenin, ond Cymraes yw
y frenhines. 5. Prynodd y meistr geffyl, hwrdd ac
asyn. 6. Cafwyd wyau lawer tàn yr iar. 7. Gwelais
greulondeb yr eryr gwrryw. 8. Saesnes yw gwraig fy
mab. 9. Gwelodd y plentyn flodau ac adar lawer yn
yr ardd. 10. Prynais farddoniaeth y Cymro i (=*for*)
gyfaill o Gaer.

(*b*) Translate into Welsh :—

1. Chester stands on the Dee. 2. The cat went after
the birds. 3. He travelled through Wales in a year.
4. Honour thy father. 5. I saw the Queen of England.
6. There are in the field many she-asses, sheep and
mares. 7. A stone fell on my maidservant's foot.
8. The king's son is my uncle's master. 9. I spent
many years with an Englishman in England. 10. My
wife's sister is my brother's wife.

THE ADJECTIVE.

In the study of the Welsh adjective, its etymology and syntax will be taken together in the following order :—

   (1) Position, Number and Gender of ordinary Descriptive Adjectives.
   (2) Degrees of Comparison.
   (3) Numerals.

1. POSITION, NUMBER AND GENDER OF THE ADJECTIVE.

(*a*) Position.—The Adjective generally *follows* its noun in Welsh. **See § 74 Gram.** For exceptions, **see §§ 337** and **589 Gram.,** especially the use of holl (*all, whole*), hen (*old*), prif (*chief*), gwir (*true, real*) and unig (*only*). For the Attributive and Predicative use of the Adjective, **see § 304, Forms II and V with footnote, § 306.**

   The Predicative *yn*, which is not to be translated into English, is followed by an Adjective in the Voiced (or Soft) Mutation, except when such Adjective begins with *ll* or *rh*. **See § 324 Gram.**

(*b*) Number.—Although many adjectives have Singular and Plural forms (**see §§ 74, 78, 99 Gram.**), yet the prevailing tendency is to write the Adjective in the Singular even with a Plural noun. **See § 79 and the Rule given in § 325 Gram.**

(*c*) Gender.—In Welsh it is only the Singular Adjective that agrees with its noun in Gender. For the few Feminine forms of Welsh adjectives, **see §§ 102-3 Gram.** It should be noticed, however, that here again Welsh shows a fondness for the *Masculine* adjective ; and that the chief difference between an adjective following a feminine noun and the one following a masculine noun lies in the fact that the former is *always mutated*. The only Numeral Adjectives that indicate gender are dau (m.), dwy (f.) ; tri (m.), tair (f.) ; pedwar (m.), pedair (f.) ; trydydd (m.), trydedd (f.) ; pedwerydd (m.), pedwaredd (f.).

(*d*) For the Adjectival uses of Pronouns, see § **141,** for Possessive Adjectives ; § **148,** for Demonstrative Adjectives ; § **158,** for Interrogative Adjectives ; and §§ **163, 164** for Indefinite Adjectives.

VOCABULARY 5.

NOUNS.

Alecsander (*Alexander*).
byd (*world*), *m.*
cyfaill (*friend*), *m.*
cyff (*trunk of a tree*), *m.*
Cymraeg (*the Welsh language*).
Dafydd (*David*).
dail, deilen (*leaves, leaf*), *f.*
dol, dolydd (*meadow, meadows*), *f.*
dyffryn, dyffrynoedd (*vale, vales*), *m.*
ffordd, ffyrdd (*way, ways*), *f.*

marchnad (*market*), *f.*
nos, nosweithiau (*night,nights*), *f.*
palas, palasau (*palace, palaces*), *m.*
porth, pyrth (*gate, gates*), *m.*
pwnc, pynciau (*subject, subjects*), *m.*
troed, traed (*foot, feet*), *m.*
tywydd (*weather*), *m.*
Tywi (*the river Towy*), *f.*

ADJECTIVES.

brwnt, bront (*dirty*), *m.* and *f.*
cadarn, cedyrn (*strong*), *s.* and *pl.*
coch, cochion (*red*), *s.* and *pl.*
cryf, cref, cryfion (*strong*), *m., f.* and *pl.*
cul, culion (*narrow*), *s.* and *pl.*
cywir (*true, faithful*).
da (*good*).
dewr, dewrion (*brave*), *s.* and *pl.*
du, duon (*black*), *s.* and *pl.*
dwfn, dofn (*deep*), *m.* and *f.*
gwael (*poor*).
gwlyb, gwleb (*wet*), *m.* and *f.*
gwyn, gwen, gwynion (*white*), *m., f.* and *pl.*

gwyrdd, gwerdd, gwyrddion (*green*), *m., f.* and *pl.*
hardd, heirdd (*pretty, beautiful*), *s.* and *pl.*
hen (*old*).
hir, hirion (*long*), *s.* and *pl.*
ieuanc, ieuainc (*young*), *s.* and *pl.*
llwm, llom (*bare*), *m.* and *f.*
llydan, llydain (*broad, wide*), *s.* and *pl.*
mān (*small*).
mawr, mawrion (*great, big*), *s.* and *pl.*
melus, melusion (*sweet*), *s.* and *pl.*

ADJECTIVES *(continued)*—

melyn, melen, melynion *(yellow)*, *m.*, *f.* and *pl.*

prif *(chief)*.

prydferth *(beautiful)*.

tew, tewion *(thick, fat)*, *s.* and *pl.*

tlawd, tlodion *(poor)*, *s.* and *pl.*

tlws, tlos *(pleasant, pretty)*, *m.* and *f.*

trwm, trom, trymion *(heavy)*, *m.*, *f.* and *pl.*

tywyll, tywell *(dark)*, *m.* and *f.*

ADJECTIVE PRONOUNS.

fy *(my)*, dy *(thy)*, ei *(his* or *her)*.

ein *(our)*, eich *(your)*, eu *(their)*.

hwn *(this)*, *m.* ; hon. *(this)*, *f.*

pa *(what ?)*.

amryw *(many)*.

arall, ereill *(another, other)*, *s.* and *pl.*

holl, yr holl *(all, the whole)*.

rhai *(some)*.

VERBS.

daw *(comes)*, 3 s. Pres. Ind.

dysgodd *(taught, did teach)*.

gwna *(makes)*, 3 s. Pres. Ind.

gorchfygodd *(conquered)*, 3 s. Aor.

oedd *(was)*, 3 s. Past Impf.

pora *(grazes)*, 3 s. Pres. Ind.

sy'n canu *(is singing)*.

For other verbs, see previous vocabularies.

ADVERBS, ETC.

Eto *(still, again)*, ar *(on, upon)*, yn *(in)*, ond *(but)*, yn felus *(sweetly)*, iawn *(very)*, o *(from)*, heddyw *(to-day)*.

EXERCISE 18.

(a) Translate into English :—

1. Prynodd amryw flodau heirdd. 2. Gorchfygodd Alecsander yr holl fyd. 3. Y mae cestyll cedyrn yn nyffryn tlws y Tywi. 4. Y mae eich hen frenin eto'n ddewr. 5. Prif bwnc ein hysgol yw Cymraeg. 6. Tywydd gwlyb a wna flwyddyn lom. 7. Gwyn yw'r blodau, gwyrdd yw'r dail a choch yw'r cyff. 8. Adar mân sy'n canu yn felus. 9. Cul yw'r porth ond llydan yw'r ffordd. 10. Dynes gref oedd mam y gwas hwn. 11. Dafydd yw fy nghyfaill cywir. 12. Pa bwnc arall a ddysgodd yr athraw i blant yr ysgol hon ?

(b) Translate into Welsh :—

1. Thy feet are wet. 2. He sold my yellow, white and red flowers. 3. This night is long and dark. 4. Brave

sons come from poor Wales. 5. He was a good friend but a poor master. 6. He sold his dirty house and bought this beautiful palace. 7. I placed many heavy stones on the wet road. 8. I sold in the market all the strong horses, the black cattle and the fat sheep. 9. Our lambs graze on your green meadows. 10. There are some very young girls in this school. 11. This deep river runs into the great sea. 12. Another young man will come to this market to-day.

2. DEGREES OF COMPARISON.—As in English, there are two modes of expressing the Comparison of Adjectives in Welsh, viz. the *Inflexional mode* of adding-**ed,-ach,-af** to the Positive. **See § 114 Gram.**, and the *Periphrastic method* of writing **mor, mwy** and **mwyaf** before the Positive. **See § 119 Gram.**

Note, however, that Welsh has, besides the Comparative Proper, an extra Comparative of Equality,[1] the uses of which should be carefully studied. **See §§ 114, 118 Gram.**

A large number of Adjectives are also Irregularly compared. **See § 115 Gram.** In the Syntax special attention should be given to the Comparative Clauses. **See §§ 359a, 360 Gram.** Note that Welsh often uses the Superlative where English has the Comparative, as Po iachaf y bo dyn, cryfaf oll fydd (*The healthier a man is, the stronger he will be*).

VOCABULARY 6.

NOUNS.

afon (*river*), *f.*
angau (*death*), *m.*
arian (*silver, money*), *m.*
bachgen (*boy*), *m.*
blodau (*flowers*).
brawd (*brother*), *m.*
cariad (*love*), *m.*
coed (*trees*), *f.*
dibyn (*edge*), *m.*
eglwys (*church*), *f.*
eira (*snow*), *m.*

ffuon (*foxglove, ruddy*).
grudd, deurudd (*cheek, two cheeks*), *f.*
gwlad (*country*), *f.*
llyfr (*book*), *m.*
paradwys (*Paradise*), *f.*
Saesneg (*the English language*), *f.*
teulu (*family*), *m.*
tir (*land*), *m.*
tŷ, tai (*house, houses*), *m.*

[1] This may be called for convenience the 'equative' degree.

ADJECTIVES.

(Inf. = Inflexional; Peri. = Periphrastic; Irr.=Irregular mode of comparison).

agos (*near, Irr.*).
anwyl (*dear, Inf.*).
caredig (*kind, Inf.*).
coch (*red, Inf.*).
cryf (*strong, Inf.*).
cyfoethog (*rich, Inf.*).
cymysg (*mixed*).
da (*good, Irr.*).
gwyn (*white, Inf.*).
hardd (*fair, beautiful, Inf.*).
hen (*old, Inf.*).
hir (*long, Irr.*).
ieuanc (*young, Inf.*).
llai (*smaller, Irr.*).
mawr (*large, Irr.*).
pell (*far, Inf.*).
rhad (*cheap, Inf.*).
tàl (*tall, Inf.*).
tlws (*pretty, Inf.*).
trwm (*heavy, Inf.*).

VERBS.

bo (byddo=*he, she, or it be*),
   3 *s. Pres. Subj.*
saif (*it will stand*), 3 *s. Fut.*
ni welais (*I have not seen*),
   1 *s. Perf. or Aor. Indic.*
y maent (*they are*), Cp. y mae
   =*it is, there is.*
gwerthais (*I sold*).
prynodd (*he bought*).
aeth (*he went*).
cefais (*I found* or *I had*).
rhoddodd (*he gave*).

ADVERBS, ETC.

am (*for*).
ymaith (*away*).
bob amser (*always*).
wrth (*compared with*).
fy hun (*my own*).
erioed (*never*).

IDIOMS. Yn (not translatable) marks the Predicate Noun or the Predicate Adj., as yn frenin (*king*); " yn dalach " (*taller*), na (*than*), na'r (*than the*).
  ni, nid (*no, not*) cyn (*as*) used with the Comparative of Equality, as " cyn wynned a'r eira" (*as white as the snow*).
  Po is used with the Superlative, as " po gryfaf " (*the stronger*), or " goreu po leiaf " (*the less the better*). It translates the English *the* with the *Comparative*.
  The English *how* with an Adjective is translated by the Comparative of Equality in Welsh, as How near ! *Agose* or *nesed* ! Llai o dir (*less land*, lit., *less of land*).
  Genitive position translates the English Possessive case, as " my brother's flowers " (*blodau fy mrawd*).

EXERCISE 19.

(*a*) Translate into English :—

1. Y mae'r bachgen yn gryfach na'r tad a'r ferch yn harddach na'r fam.   2. Cochach oedd ei deurudd na'r ffuon cochaf.   3. Y nesaf i'r eglwys yw'r pellaf o baradwys.   4. Hardded wrth fy ngwlad fy hun yw'r gwledydd pell.   5. Po gryfaf fo'r castell hwyaf y saif.   6. Y fam yw'r garedicaf o'r teulu.   7. Ni welais flodau tlysach erioed, y maent cyn wynned a'r eira.   8. Gwerthais lai o dir ond am fwy o arian.   9. Y mae yn dalach na'r gwas, ond nid cyn gryfed.   10. Goreu po leiaf o Saesneg fo'n gymysg a'r Gymraeg.

(*b*) Translate into Welsh :—

1. He bought the cheapest of the houses.   2. My dearest friend went away to-day.   3. The school is the next house to the church.   4. I found the heaviest stones in the river and the largest trees on the mountain.   5. How near he stands to the edge !   6. He gave the best book to the youngest son.   7. Stronger is love than death.   8. The cheaper the land the richer the master.   9. The oldest man is not always the best man.   10. How pretty compared with my own flowers are my brother's flowers.

3. NUMERALS.—After committing to memory the list of Cardinal and Ordinal Numerals given in § **121 Gram.**, the Adverbial expressions given in § **129** should be learnt.

(*a*) Formation.—Notice how compound Numerals are formed.   There are simple and distinct words for the figures 1 to 10, 20, 100 and 1,000.   From these, compounds are formed either by multiplying one number with another, as $20 \times 4 = 80$ (*pedwar ugain*), by using the preposition **ar** (*upon*), as 1 upon $10 = 11$ (un ar ddeg), or by using the conjunction **a** (*and*), as 40 and $5 = 45$ (pump a deugain).

The smaller number usually precedes the larger, and the noun is inserted after the first element of the compound Numeral, as Seventy disciples (deg disgybl a thri-ugain).   **See § 123 Gram.**

The Ordinals are made from the Cardinals by adding
-ed or **-fed,** and the Adverbial Numerals or Multiplicatives
by adding **tro** or **gwaith** (*time*).

(*b*) Usage.—Note that 2, 3, 4, third and fourth are inflected
for gender. § **121 Gram.**

Note that 10, 20, 100, 1,000 and 10,000 have plural forms
when used as nouns. § **125 Gram.**

Note that 5, 6, and 100 when used as adjectives are
spelt as pum, chwe, càn, but when used as nouns they
are fully written, as pump, chwech, and cant respectively.

For the Adverbial use, **see** § **129 ;** for the Distributive
use, see examples 7, 8 and 9 in § **129 ;** and for the use
of Possessive Adjectives with Cardinals, see § **128 Gram.**

(*c*) Position.—Simple Cardinals and Ordinals usually pre-
cede their nouns, as tri dyn (*three men*). Note, however,
that **cyntaf** (*first*) follows its noun.

(*d*) Concord.—The noun qualified by a numeral is always
Singular in Welsh, although the verb and demonstrative
adjective may be plural, as Y ddau ddyn hyn a derfys-
gasant y dorf (*These two men have disturbed the multi-
tude*). But if the preposition *o* follows the numeral, the
noun is written in the plural, as pump o ddynion (*five
men*).

(*e*) The Mutations governed by the Numerals. **See pp.
77-79 Gram. Type A (a), 3 ; Type B, 4 ; Type C, 3.**
Note ugain (twenty) in compound numerals is written
as *hugain*, as Saith ar hugain (*twenty-seven*).

VOCABULARY 7.

NOUNS.

adran (*part*), *f.*
Awst (*August*), *m.*
blwydd, blwyddyn, blynedd
(*year*), *f.*
dalen (*leaf*), *f.*
dydd (*day*), *m.*
emyn (*hymn*), *f.*
glan y môr (*seaside*).

gwartheg (*cattle, cows*).
llath, llathenni (*yard, yards*),
f.
lle (*place*), *m.*
llyfr (*book*), *m.*
mil, miloedd (*thousand, thou-
sands*).
milltir, milltiroedd (*mile,
miles*), *f.*

Vocabulary 7 *(continued)*—

NOUNS *(continued)*—
mis *(month)*, *m.*
myrddiwn, myrddiynau *(tens of thousands)*.
oed *(age)*, *m.*
ochr *(side)*, *f.*
pobl *(people)*.
punt, punnoedd *(pound, pounds)*.
rhan, rhannau *(division, divisions)*.
teulu *(family)*, *m.*
tro *(time, turn)*, *m.*
ugeiniau *(scores)*.
wythnos *(a week)*, *f.*

CONJUNCTIONS, ETC.

ar *(on, upon)*.
o *(of)*, often untranslated.
heibio *(by, besides)*.
i *(unto, to)*.
yn well *(better)*.
er pan *(since)*.
mewn *(in, within)*.

pan fu farw *(when he died)*.
yn yr un tŷ *(in the one or same house)*.

ADJECTIVES.

diflas *(miserable)*.
pob *(every)*.
bob yn un ac un *(one by one)*.
bob yn ail *(alternately)*.
For the Numerals, see the lists in the Grammar.

VERBS.

argraffwyd *(was printed)*.
canwn *(let us sing)*, *Imperative.*
geilw *(he calls)*.
ganwyd *(was born)*.
gwelais *(I saw)*.
gwerthais *(I sold)*.
gwnaf *(I do* or *shall do)*.
lladdodd *(he killed)*.
lletya *(he dwells)*.
rhoddodd *(he gave)*.
teithiodd *(he travelled)*.
ysgrifenodd *(he wrote)*.

EXERCISE 20.

(*a*) Translate into English :—

1. Teithiodd gàn milltir mewn wythnos. 2. Rhoddodd dair punt a phedwar ugain am y tŷ. 3. Mab deng mlwydd a chant oedd Joseph pan fu farw. 4. Gwerthais y pedwar ceffyl am chwe ugain punt a phrynais wyth o wartheg a thri oen. 5. Bob yn un ac un aeth y saith mlynedd diflas heibio. 6. Ganwyd i Job saith o fechgyn a thair o ferched. 7. Gwnaf yn well yr ail dro na'r tro cyntaf. 8. Yr oedd ugeiniau o bobl yn y lle heddyw. 9. Y mae wyth mlynedd a deugain er pan welais y lle.

10. Lletya yn yr un tŷ dad a mam, pedair merch a thri mab.

(*b*) Translate into Welsh :—

1. The man bought twenty-one sheep and forty-seven lambs. 2. There are two sides to every leaf. 3. The first Welsh book was printed in the year 1546. 4. Let us sing the one hundred and seventy-eighth hymn. 5. There are twenty-six yards from the house to the river. 6. Saul killed his thousands, but David his tens of thousands. 7. There are three divisions to the second part of the book and four to the first. 8. He wrote fifteen books in ten years. 9. On the thirteenth day of the month of August the family went for nine days to the seaside. 10. The brothers call in the houses alternately.

THE PRONOUN.

The exercises on the Pronouns are arranged in the following groups :—

1. The Personal Pronoun (four kinds), including the Formal or Introductory pronoun.
2. The Possessive, Demonstrative, Interrogative and Indefinite Pronouns.
3. The Relative Pronoun.

1. PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

(a) The Simple or Normal Personal Pronoun should first be learnt. **See § 132 b Gram.**

Note that the English Neuter Pronoun *it* is to be translated by **ef** (*m. he*) or **hi** (*f. she*) in Welsh. Pronouns are often repeated after verbs and nouns in Welsh for the sake of emphasis, and are to be parsed as if in Apposition, as " Gwyddoch chwi " (**You** *know*), " Dysgaf " (*I learn*), " Dysgaf fi " (**I** *learn*). **See § 134 Gram.**

The personal pronouns are usually followed by the voiced mutation. This is due to the omission after them of the pre-verbal relative particle " a."

For the use of *ti* and *chwi*, **see § 138 ;** and for certain limitations in the use of all the pronouns, **see §§ 562-66, 568 Gram.**

(b) The uses of the Emphatic and Conjunctive Personal Pronouns should next be studied. **See § 132 c and d Gram.**

With regard to the Emphatic Pronouns it should be noted that they generally precede their verbs, and are used only with the 3rd pers. sing. **See § 135 Gram.**

The English language has no equivalent pronoun to the Conjunctive of Welsh, its special meaning being usually translated by adding the words *also* or *indeed* to the English pronoun. All the Welsh classical writers make frequent use of this pronoun, and it is an idiom which should be carefully imitated by the student.

" A fynnwch chwithau hefyd fyned ymaith ? "   (*Will
ye also go away ?*)

" Ni fedrais innau nad wylais beth o dosturi."   (*I, also,
could not help weeping a little out of pity.*)

" Os gofynni di i mi paham, minnau a ofynnaf i tithau,
O Eryr, paham nad wyt ti cyn lleied ar dryw bach ? "
(*If thou askest me why, I (indeed) will ask thee (also), O
eagle, why art thou not as small as the wren ?*)

(*c*) Lastly, the Postvocalic Personal Pronouns should
be studied.   **See § 132 a Gram.**   These Postvocalic
Personal Pronouns should be distinguished in form,
meaning and use from the Postvocalic *Possessive Ad-
jectives.*   **See § 141 Gram.**

Vocabulary 8.

NOUNS.

aderyn (*bird*), *m.*
bedd (*grave*), *m.*
brenin (*king*), *m.*
brawd (*brother*), *m.*
bran (*crow*), *f.*
camp (*task*), *f.*
cor (*choir*), *m.*
cyfeillion (*friends*), *m.*
cyfarfod canu (*singing prac-
   tice*).
chwaer (*sister*), *f.*
Emanuel (*Immanuel*), *m.*
gwartheg (*cattle*).
lleidr (*thief*), *m.*
nyth (*nest*), *f.*
nos (*night*), *f.*
plant (*children*).
pluf (*feathers*).
tro (*turn, walk ;* am dro=*for
   a walk*), *m.*

ADVERBS, ETC.

yn drwm (*heavily*).
yfory (*to-morrow*).
adref (*home, towards home*).
yn awr (*now*).
iawn (*very*).
nid (*never*).
gwell yw gennyf (*I prefer*).
os (*if*) is followed by the
   Indicative.
er (*although*).
canys (*for*).
gyda (*with*).
rhyngoch (*between you*).
iddo ef (*to him*).

ADJECTIVES.

cryfaf (Superl. of cryf, *strong*).
dued (Comp. of Equal. of du,
   black, how black !).
goreu, yn oreu (*best*).
mawr, mwyaf (*great, most*).

VOCABULARY 8 *(continued)*—

ADJECTIVES *(continued)*—

newydd *(new)*.
oer *(cold)*.
talaf (superl. of tal, *tall)*.
union *(rightful)*.

VERBS.

awn, ni awn *(we shall go)*.
bydd, fe fydd *(there will be)*.
beirniadu *(to criticise)*, verb-noun.
bwrw eira *(to snow)*, verb-noun.
byw *(to live)*, verb-noun.
canu, yn canu *(singing)*, verb-noun.
claddasant *(they buried)*.
clywais *(I heard)*.
clywed *(to hear)*, verb-noun.
condemnir *(it shall be condemned)*.
credu *(to believe)*, verb-noun.
cyffesa *(confess)*, Imperative.
cymerwch *(take)*, Imper. 2. P.

cyrchu *(to fetch* or *bring)*, verb-noun.
darllenais *(I read)*.
dewch or deuwch *(come)*, Imper. 2. P.
dewisasoch *(you have chosen)*.
dont or deuant *(they will come)*.
gadawaf *(I leave)*.
gwelais *(I saw)*, ni welais *(I did not see)*.
gwn *(I know)*, gŵyr *(he knows)*.
gwyddoch *(you know)*.
prynaf *(I shall buy)*, os pryni di *(if thou wilt buy)*.
rhyddheir di *(thou shalt be released)*.
siarad *(to speak)*, sy'n siarad *(is speaking)*.
tyred *(come)*, Imper. 2nd sing.
y mae hi *(it (lit. she) is)*, yr oedd hi *(it* (lit. *she) was)*, myfi yw *(It is I)*.

EXERCISE 21.

(*a*) Translate into English :—

1. Y mae hi yn bwrw eira yn drwm. 2. Mi welais nyth aderyn ac yr oedd yn dlws iawn. 3. Fe brynodd fy nhad lyfr newydd imi. 4. Chwi wyddoch ddued yw pluf y fran. 5. Ni awn am dro yfory, os dont hwy gyda ni. 6. Clywais hwynt yn canu ond ni welais di yn y côr. 7. Aeth i'w gyrchu adref. 8. Os tydi yw'r lleidr, cyffesa i mi yn awr a rhyddheir di. 9. Efe yw'r talaf, myfi yw'r cryfaf. 10. Chwychwi a berchir, hwynthwy a gondemnir. 11. Os prynni di fy nefaid

D

i, prynnaf finnau dy wartheg dithau. 12. Claddasant y plant, a'r tad, yntau, a aeth i'w fedd. 13. Tyr'd i'n clywed a'n beirniadu. 14. Ei gredu a'i fyw yw'r gamp.

(*b*) Translate into Welsh :—

1. It is very cold to-day. 2. There will be a singing practice to-morrow night. 3. I prefer him to her. 4. Come to hear us singing. 5. For Immanuel is his rightful king also. 6. I am Alexander the Great. 7. He and I are not friends. 8. Take her and her brother to school. 9. I read to him and he to me. 10. He, too, never went to school. 11. I leave it between you and them. 12. She also is my sister. 13. We indeed know best, although it is they who speak most. 14. Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you.

2. POSSESSIVE, DEMONSTRATIVE, INTERROGATIVE AND IN-DEFINITE PRONOUNS.

(*a*) Possessive. Welsh has no proper Possessive nor Reflexive Pronouns but uses for them the following substitutes :—

The Article *yr* with the noun *eiddo*, conjugated with pronominal suffixes, like the preposition " heb " in § **293**, translates the English Possessive Pronoun *mine, thine,* etc. **See § 140 Gram.**

The Possessive Adjective *fy,* and so on, with the noun *hun* or *hunan* translates the English Reflexive pronouns *myself, thyself,* etc. **See §§ 139, 569 Gram.**

The Normal Possessive Adjectives can be easily distinguished from the Possessive Pronouns, inasmuch as the former are used *with* nouns and the latter *for* nouns. But the *Postvocalic forms* of the Possessive Adjective may at first be difficult to distinguish from the postvocalic forms of the Personal Pronoun. **Cp. § 132 a with § 141 Gram.**

In **form** both sets are alike, with the exception of the 3rd sing. and plur. of the Possessive Adjective, which assume the form of '**w** after the preposition **i** (*to*).

In **position** they are alike in that both can only be

written after words ending in a vowel, but differ in that the Poss. *Pronouns* always precede **verbs,** while Poss. *Adjectives* precede **nouns.**

In **function** Possessive Pronouns are always in the Accusative case governed by the verb that follows them ; whereas Possessive Adjectives agree in gender with the nouns to which they refer.

NOTE.—The postvocalic possessive adjectives are in origin probably remnants of the genitive case of the personal pronouns.

(*b*) Demonstrative. Study the uses of hwn, hon, hyn, hwnnw, honno, hynny, both when written alone as well as when compounded with the Adverbs yma, yna, acw. **See §§ 148-154, 580 Gram.** Note also the use of arall, gilydd, y naill and y llall. **See §§ 155-157 Gram.** When the Demonstratives are used as Adjectives they can be easily recognized by the order of the words, which is always as follows : Article, Noun, Demonstrative Adjective, as " y dyn hwn " (*this man*). Compare ὁ ἀνὴρ οὗτος.

(*c*) Interrogative, together with the Modes of introducing Questions.

The Pronoun " pwy " (*who ?*) is always written alone, while the Adjective " pa " (*what ?*) is immediately followed by its noun. **See §§ 158-161 Gram.**

Note the Welsh equivalents of the English Interrogatives : Who, Whom (*Pwy*), What (*Pa beth* or *Beth*), Whose (the noun followed by *Pwy*), How many (*Pa sawl* or *Pa nifer o*) ? How much (*Pa faint o*) ? What kind (*Pa fath* or *Pa ryw*) ? For the Syntax of Direct Questions see **§§ 283, 344 a and d Gram. ;** and for Dependent Questions, **see § 370 a Gram.**

(*d*) Indefinite. Study carefully the following paragraphs, **§§ 162-166, 579 Gram.**

Note that **dim** (*of, nothing* or *none*) which originally meant " something," has acquired a negative meaning and is often used in Welsh to strengthen the force of the true negative adverbs **ni** and **nid.**

Vocabulary 9.

NOUNS.

arian (*money*), *m.*
blwyddyn (*year*), *f.*
brawd (*brother*), *m.*
bwyd (*food*), *m.*
cariad (*love*), *m.*
cyfaill (*friend*), *m.*
cwr (*end, edge*), *m.*
chwaer (*sister*), *f.*
dyddiau (*days*).
fferm (*farm*), *f.*
gardd (*garden*), *f.*
gwlad (*country*), *f.*
llogell, llogellau (*pocket, pockets*), *f.*
llyfrau (*books*).
pris (*price*), *m.*
pryd (*time*), *m.*

ADJECTIVES.

cuddiedig (*hidden*).
ffol (*foolish*).
holl (*all*).

ADVERBS, ETC.

a ? ai ? (*Interrogative particles not to be translated*).
gennych (*with you*).
am danynt (*for them*).
adref (*towards home*).
gartref (*at home*).
heno (*to-night*).
heddyw (*to-day*).
cyn hir (*ere long*).
ïe (*yes*), Nage (*no*).
Nac ydynt (*No, they are not*).
Nac oes, ddim (*No, there is none*).
fel (*as*).

VERBS.

carwn (*we love, let us love*).
ceisi (*thou dost seek*).
coelia (*he believes, will believe*).
daw, (*he will come*).
dof (*I shall come*).
dyro (*give*), Imper.
edmygu (*to admire*), verb-noun.
galwodd (*he called, he did call*).
gwn (*I know ; nis gwn ddim, I know nothing*).
(A) glywsoch am ? (*Have you heard of ?*)
gweled (*to see*), verb-noun.
oes (*yes*, or *is*).
prynwch (*buy*), Imper. 2. P.
rhoddi (*to give*), rhoddwch (*you will give*).
sydd (*is*), sydd gennych (*is with you, you have*).
teithiodd (*he travelled*).
ydych (*you are*).
ymwel â (*he visits*).

PRONOUNS.

eu hunain (*themselves*).
pa sawl gwaith ? (*how many times ?*).
hwn yma (*this here*).
hwn acw (*that yonder*).
y naill, y llall (*the one, the other*).
ein gilydd (*one another*).
rhywrai ffol (*some foolish ones*).
ei heiddo hi (*hers*).
y rhai hyn (*these*).

Exercise 22.

(*a*) Translate into English :— -

1. Aeth pawb i'w dŷ ei hun. 2. Dyro hwn i'th fam a'r llall i'th dad. 3. Pa sawl gwaith y galwodd i'w gweled hwy ? 4. Prynwch lyfrau i chwi eich hunain. 5. Pa un o'r llyfrau a geisi ? Ai hwn yma ai hwn acw ? 6. O'r pryd hwnnw teithiodd ei wlad ei hun o'r naill gŵr i'r llall. 7. A oes gennych ddim bwyd ? Nac oes ddim. 8. Carwn ein gilydd fel y carwn ein hunain. 9. Ai heddyw y daw eich mab adref ? Nage, yfory. 10. Pwy a'u coelia ond rhywrai ffol fel hwy eu hunain ? 11. A yw dy frawd a'th chwaer gartref ? Nac ydynt. 12. Ei heiddo hi yw'r blodau hyn.

(*b*) Translate into Welsh :—

1. All the money went to their own pockets. 2. Whose flowers are these ? 3. I will come to see you and your family ere long. 4. In these days many visit the castles of Wales to admire them. 5. What is in yonder school to-night ? Is it a singing practice ? Yes. 6. Her father is your hidden friend. 7. Whose son are you ? 8. I know nothing about this school. 9. How many servants have you on the farm this year ? 10. This is the house, and this the garden. What price will you give for them ? 11. Have you heard of their love the one to the other ? 12. This is mine and that is yours.

3. THE RELATIVE PRONOUN.—This is one of the most difficult Parts of Speech to be mastered in the Welsh language, partly because the student needs much acquaintance with the classics of Welsh prose before he can idiomatically manipulate the Relative Clause ; and partly because the tendency with careless writers of Modern Welsh is to use *yr hwn* oftener than is necessary. The relative pronoun is by its very nature a conjunction, as well as a pronoun, and it is contrary to the instinct of a language to make its joints too bulky. The student should therefore carefully study the sections dealing with the syntax of the Relative Pronoun, viz., **§§ 167-171, 570-578 Gram.** Particular attention should be paid to the following points :—

(*a*) The position of the Relative Pronoun.

(*b*) The use of **a** before the verb where the relative is subject or object.

(*c*) The use of **yr (y)** in Oblique cases other than the Accusative. **See § 168 Gram.**

(**Y** is written as **yr** before verbs beginning with a vowel, but this should not be confused with the Article *yr* which always precedes nouns.)

(*d*) The kinds of Complex sentences in which the Relative pronoun is used. **See § 305** for the Inverted Order, **§ 362** for Adjective clauses, and Appendix.

(*e*) The agreement or non-agreement of the Relative with its antecedent and verb. **See § 363** and **§ 364 Gram.** Note the use of the Subjunctive Mood with the Relative pronoun.

(*f*) Never translate the English Relative Pronouns by means of the words *pa un* and *pa rai*, and wherever possible give preference to the simple proclitics *a* and *yr (y)* rather than the compound forms.

VOCABULARY 10.

NOUNS.

bachgen (*boy*), *m.*
craig (*rock*), *f.*
cyfraith (*law*), *f.*
dydd o orffwys (*day of rest*), *m.*
Duw (*God*), *m.*
gelyn (*enemy*), *m.*
gerddi (*gardens*).
gwobr (*prize, reward*), *f.*
gwraig (*woman*), *f.*
marchnad (*market*), *f.*
nefoedd (*heaven*), *f.*
parch (*respect*), *m.*
pregethwr (*preacher*), *m.*
pwll (*pit*), *m.*
rhan (*lot, phase*), *f.*
rhodd (*gift*), *f.*

ADJECTIVES.

dieithr (*strange*).
gwir (*true*).
gwlyb iawn (*very wet*).
holl (*all*).
hynny (*those*).

PRONOUNS.

ef (*it*).
yr hwn, y neb, y sawl (*who, whoever*).
un (*one*).
pwy bynnag (*whosoever*).
y rhai oedd oll (*who were all*).

VOCABULARY 10 *(continued)—*

ADVERBS, ETC.

ar unwaith *(at once)*.
cyn hir *(ere long)*.
dacw (lit., *see yonder*).
dyma (lit., *see here*).
gynt *(formerly)*.
gymaint *(as much)*.
neithiwr *(last night)*.
nid *(not)*.
oddicartref *(from home)*.
wele *(behold, see)*.

VERBS.

boddi *(to drown)*, boddwyd *(was drowned)*.
blino *(to tire)*, oedd yn flinedig *(was tired)*.
caru *(to love)*, cared *(let him love*, a garo *(he who loves)*, General Relative with the Subjunctive.
cael *(to receive)*, cefais *(I received)*, cafodd *(he received)*.
a'm cant *(they shall find me)*.
canmolwch *(you praise)*.
ceisiant *(they seek)*.
cloddio *(dig)*, Subjunctive, 3rd sing.
clywsom *(we heard)*.
collais *(I have lost* or *I lost)*.
cospi *(to punish)*, a gospir *(will be punished)*.
cyfarfum *(I met)*.
cymerwch *(take)*, Imper. 2nd pl.
daeth *(he has come)*.
dangosais *(I showed)*.

danfonais *(I sent)*.
darllenai *(he used to read)*, Imperf. 3rd sing.
dewiswch *(choose, take)*, Imper. 2nd pl.
disgwyliem *(we were looking)*.
dywedo *(says)*, Subj. 3rd sing.
ennillodd *(he won)*. Aor 3rd. s.
galw *(to call)*,geilw *(he will call)*.
gwelais *(I saw)*, gwelsoch *(you saw)*.
addysgwyd *(was taught)*.
hoffwch *(you like)*.
llafuriodd *(he laboured)*.
mentrodd *(he ventured)*.
prynais *(I bought)*, prynodd *(he bought)*, prynai *(he was buying, he bought)*.
rhoddwch *(give)*, Imper., 2. P. rhoddwyd *(was given)*.
safodd *(he stood)*, safai *(was standing)*.
syrth *(he will fall)*.
torri *(to break)*, tyr *(breaks)*.
ymguddiai *(he was hiding* or *he hid himself)*.
ymwelsant â *(they visited)*.

PREPOSITIONS, ETC.

yn awr *(now)*.
yn fore *(early)*.
ganddi *(with her)*, gennych *(with you)*.
am dano *(for him, for it)*.
drostynt *(on their behalf, for them)*.
ynddo *(in it)*.
wrth *(by)*.
iddo *(to him)*.

EXERCISE 23.

(*a*) Translate into English :—

1. Collais y defaid a brynais yn y farchnad. 2. Cyfarfum â'r dyn dieithr a welsoch neithiwr. 3. A ddywedo pawb, gwir yw. 4. Dacw'r wraig y prynais flodau ganddi. 5. Nid hwn yw'r pregethwr y disgwyliem am dano. 6. Cafodd barch gan y teulu 'y llafuriodd drostynt. 7. Rhoddwch ef i'r plant sydd gartref. 8. Dyma'r ysgol y'm haddysgwyd ynddi. 9. Y sawl a gloddio bwll a syrth ynddo. 10. Pa lyfr bynnag a brynai, darllenai ef ar unwaith. 11. Wele'r tai a brynodd fy mrawd. 12. Dewiswch pa rodd bynnag a hoffwch. 13. Fe eilw fy nhad, sydd yn awr oddicartref, gyda chwi cyn hir. 14. Mentrodd i'r tŷ yr ymguddiai ei elyn ynddo. 15. Wele'r gerddi yn y rhai y cefais yr holl flodau hynny.

(*b*) Translate into Welsh :—

1. I saw the boy who won the prize. 2. I met the men whom you praise so much. 3. He who loves God, let him love man. 4. The day on which they visited us was a very wet one. 5. This is not the book for which I sent. 6. This is the reward that fell to my lot. 7. Our Father which art in heaven. 8. Are these the children that we heard singing ? 9. Those that seek Me early shall find Me. 10. Whosoever breaks this law will be punished. 11. The man that we were looking for has come. 12. Take whichever book you like. 13. His servants, who were all tired, were given a day's rest. 14. He stood by the river in which his child was drowned. 15. I showed him the rock upon which there formerly stood a castle.

ADVERBS AND CONJUNCTIONS.

The study of the Adverb and Conjunction is comparatively easy in Welsh grammar, inasmuch as the functions of both parts of speech are the same as those of the English language. Read carefully the following paragraphs, §§ **174–176 ; 590–600.** Note that the English adverb in *-ly* is usually expressed in Welsh by means of the particle *yn* followed by a corresponding adjective. To distinguish the predicative *yn* with an adjective from the adverbial *yn* with an adjective, note that the former qualifies a noun or pronoun, whereas the latter modifies a verb. §§ **324–4 Gram.**

Y mae'r llyfr yn newydd (*The book is new*).

Gweithiodd yn egniol (*He worked energetically*).

For adverbial clauses and phrases see §§ **600 ; 315–6 ; 385 ; 364 Gram.**

For a list of co-ordinating and subordinating conjunctions see §§ **314–5 Gram.,** noting particularly the use of *mai* (that), in clauses of inverted order.

VOCABULARY 11.

NOUNS.

athraw (*teacher*), *m.*
bachgen (*boy*), *m.*
brawd (*brother*), *m.*
blwydd (*year*), *f.*
ceffyl (*horse*), *m.*
defaid (*sheep*).
dosbarth (*class*), *m.*
ffordd (*road*), *f.*
gofal (*care*), *m.*
gwersi (*lessons*), *pl. f.*
gwlad (*country*), *f.*
lle (*place*), *m.*
Llundain (*London*), *f.*
llwybr (*path*), *m.*

llyfr (*book*), *m.*
menyg (*gloves*), *pl.*
milwr (*soldier*), *m.*
mis (*month*), *m.*
oed (*age*), *m.*
pris (*price*), *m.*
pwnc (*subject, point*), *m.*
rhieni (*parents*), *m.*
stori (*story*), *f.*
tad (*father*), *m.*
tân (*fire*), *m.*
tai, tŷ (*houses, house*), *m.*
teulu (*family*), *m.*
tref (*town*), *f.*
ysgol (*school*), *f.*

VOCABULARY II *(continued).*—

VERBS.

af (*I shall go*).
aeth (*he went*).
bod (*being, to be*).
bum (*I was.* Note the idiom
"bum bron a cholli "=
*I have been on the point of
losing*, i.e., *I almost lost*).
bydd (*he will be*).
byddwn (*I should be*).
cadw (*keeping, to keep*) verb-
noun.
caf (*I shall have*), caf ddod
(*I shall be allowed to come*).
cerddodd (*he walked*).
clywais (*I have heard*).
colli (*to lose, losing*) verb-noun.
cychwynodd (*he started*).
cyrhaeddodd (*he reached*).
dadleu (*discussing, to discuss*),
verb-noun.
darllen, darllenais (*to read ;
I read*).
dod (*to come*), caf ddod (*I can
come*) ; yn dod (*coming*),
Pres. Partic. Equiv.
deallaf (*I understand*).
deuwch, dewch (*come*), Imper.
2. P.
disgwyl, disgwyliaf (*to expect ;
I expect*).
dywedodd (*he said*).
eisteddwch (*sit*),Imper. plur. 2.
gadewais (*I left*).
galw, galwaf (*to call ; I call*).
gallaf, gallwyf (*I can ; I
may be able*).

gobeithiaf, gobeithiwn (*I
hope, I hoped*).
gweithiodd, yn gweithio (*he
worked, working*).
gwelais, gwelwch (*I saw, you
see*).
gweled, wedi gweled, i'w
gweled (*to see, having seen,
to see them*, lit., *to the seeing
of them*).
gwneuthoch (*you did*).
gwyddwn (*I knew*).
hoffaf (*I like*).
llwydda (*he gets on, succeeds*).
medru, na fedrech (*to be able,
that you could not*).
myned (*going, to go*),verb-noun.
ofni (*to fear, fearing*), yr wyf yn
ofni (*I fear*).
prynodd, prynwch (*he bought,
you will buy*).
rhaid (*it must*), rhaid bod
(*it must be*).
rhoisoch, a roisoch ? (*you put,
did you put ?*)
siarad (*talking, to talk*), verb-
noun.
ymddengys (*it seems*).
ymddiddan (*to talk, converse
with*).

ADJECTIVES AND ADVERBS.

acw (*yonder*).
adref (*homewards*).
ar ol (*behind, after*).
allan (*out*).
blaen, o'r blaen (*first ; before*).
bron (*almost*).

VOCABULARY II *(continued)—*

ADJECTIVES AND ADVERBS
(continued)—
brysiog, yn frysiog *(hastily).*
cynnes, yn gynnes *(warm).*
cyntaf, yn gyntaf *(first).*
da, yn dda *(good, well).*
diau, yn ddiau *(certain; un-
doubtedly).*
digon *(enough).*
diwedd, o'r diwedd *(end; at
last).*
do *(yes,* in answer to a ques-
tion where the verb is in
the Aorist).
doe, y ddoe *(yesterday).*
drachefn *(again).*
dyma *(here is,* or *here are).*
echdoe *(the day before yester-
day).*
echnos *(the night before last).*
eleni *(this present year).*
eisoes *(already).*
eto *(again, still).*
felly *(so).*
fyny, i fyny *(upwards; up).*
gerllaw *(near).*
goreu, o'r goreu *(best; very
well).*
gwael, pur wael *(poor; rather
poorly).*
gwaith, tair gwaith *(time;
three times).*
gwell, yn well na *(better;
better than).*
gwir *(true).*
hamddenol, yn fwy ham-
ddenol *(leisurely; more
leisurely).*

heddyw *(to-day).*
hir, yn hir *(long).*
hwn *(this).*
hwyrach *(probably, perhaps).*
iach, yn iachach *(healthy;
healthier).*
lawr, i lawr *(down; down-
wards).*
lle, pa le *(place; where ?).*
llynedd *(last year).*
mawr, yn fawr iawn *(large
or great; very much).*
mewn, i fewn *(in; within).*
mor *(so).*
mo'r=dim o'r *(none of).*
mwy, yn fwy *(more).*
mynych *(often, frequently).*
neilltu, o'r neilltu *(aside).*
neithiwr *(last night).*
newydd *(new).*
ni, nid *(no, not).*
oer *(cold).*
olaf, yn olaf *(last, lastly).*
paham *(why ?).*
pan *(when).*
parod, yn barod *(ready).*
pob, pob amser *(every, always).*
prin *(hardly).*
pryd, pa bryd *(when ?).*
pur, yn burach *(pure, purer).*
rhad, yn rhad *(cheap, cheaply).*
rhy *(too).*
tàn *(until, till).*
talm, er ys talm *(space of
time, long ago).*
tebyg, yn debyg *(like).*
tlws, cyn dlysed *(pretty, as
pretty).*

<div style="text-align: center;">VOCABULARY II *(continued)*—</div>

ADJECTIVES   AND   ADVERBS
(continued)—

trennydd *(the day after to-morrow)*.

trosodd, drosodd *(over)*.

yr un *(the same)*.

uchel, yn bur uchel *(high, rather high)*.

PREPOSITIONS, ETC.

am dano, am danynt *(for him ; for them)*.

ar ol *(after)*.

canys *(because)*.

ini (= i + ni, *to us)*.

cyn pen mis *(before a month is gone)*.

fel *(as, so that)*.

gan, gan fy mod *(since, since I am)*.

gyda, gyda chwi *(with, with you)*.

i, i'r *(for, to the)*.

mai *(that)*.

neu *(or)*.

oblegid *(because)*.

os *(if)*.

wịth *(by)*.

ynte *(or)*.

EXERCISE 24.

(*a*) Translate into English :—

1. Gweithiodd eich brawd yn dda ond gwneuthoch chwi yn well. 2. Cychwynodd i'r dref echdoe neu echnos, ond ni chlywais eto a gyrhaeddodd. 3. Galwaf yn fynych yn yr ysgol, canys hoffaf ymddiddan â'r athraw yn fawr iawn. 4. O'r diwedd dyma'r milwr yn dod ar ol ini ddisgwyl yn hir amdano. 5. Darllenais y llyfr yn frysiog ddoe, a gobeithiaf ei ddarllen drachefn cyn pen mis. 6. A brynodd y dyn y tai acw yn rhad ? Do, os gwir yw stori'm cyfaill. 7. Hwyrach yr af adref drennydd, oblegid deallaf fod fy nhad yn bur wael. 8. Y mae yn rhy oer i chwi fyned allan heddyw ; gwell yw i chwi gadw'n gynnes wrth y tân. 9. Dywedodd mai yn olaf y byddwn yn canu ac nid yn gyntaf fel y gobeithiwn. 10. Ni welais fy rhieni er ys talm ond disgwyliaf alw yfory gan fy mod yn gweithio gerllaw. 11. Ai i fyny ynte i lawr y ffordd yr aeth y gwas ? Mae'n debyg mai i fyny oblegid cerddodd yr un llwybr neithiwr o'r blaen. 12. Yr wyf fi a'm brawd eisoes wedi gweled Llundain deirgwaith.

(*b*) Translate into Welsh :—

1. Where is my new book ? Did you put it aside ? Yes, yesterday. 2. Why did you do so ? Because I knew very well that you could not read it till to-morrow. 3. Come in and sit down, so that I can talk more leisurely with you. 4. Very well, for I am always ready to discuss this subject. 5. The horse is almost twenty years old. If so, its price is rather high. 6. If the boy gets on with his lessons, he will undoubtedly be first in his class. 7. Is the house large enough for the family ? Hardly, I fear. 8. Perhaps you will buy the sheep when you see them. 9. When shall I come over to see them ? Come the day after to-morrow. 10. I like the country better than the town because everything seems to be purer and healthier. 11. I never saw the flowers as pretty before, your care for them must be great. 12. Last year I left my books behind. 13. This year I almost lost my gloves in the same place.

PREPOSITIONS.

The chief points to be noticed in studying the Welsh prepositions for purposes of translation and composition are the following :—

1. *The Mutations governed by them.* Taking, for example, the simple prepositions, we find that they can be tabulated thus —

   (*a*) Those governing the Radical form, cyn (*before*), er (*since*), erbyn (*against*), ger (*beside*), gerfydd (*by*), gwedi or wedi (*after*), heibio (*past*), is (*below*), mewn (*in*), serch (*although*), rhag (*lest*), rhwng (*between*).

   (*b*) Those governing the Voiced (or Soft) mutation, am (*for*), ar (*upon*), at (*to*), gan (*with*), heb (*without*), hyd (*unto*), i (*to*), o (*out of*), tan (*under*), tros (*over*), trwy (*through*), wrth (*by*). **See page 77. Type A, 6, Gram.**

   (*c*) Those governing the Aspirate mutation, â (*with*), gyda (*along with*), tua (*towards*). **See page 79. Type B, 2, Gram.**

   (*d*) Governing the Nasal mutation, yn (*in*) except when followed by a verb-noun. **See page 79. Type C, 2, Gram.**

For a fuller list see §§ **388–444** in the **Gram.**

2. *The prepositions combined with Pronominal Suffixes.* See §§ **292–6 Gram.** for the three types of suffixes ; and § **288** for a list of the prepositions that take such suffixes. Note the use of *gan* with the verb "Bod" (*to be*) to translate the English " I have " or " I possess " in § **419 Gram.**

3. *The different meanings and idiomatic uses of prepositions.* Study carefully §§ **388–444** in the **Gram.,** especially the uses of am (§ 406), ar (§ 407), at (§ 408), gan (§ 419), i (§§ 389–396), o (§§ 398–404), and yn (§§ 435–6).

4. Note the double forms—â, ag ; gyda, gydag ; dan, tan ; dros, tros ; drwy, trwy ; and distinguish between the uses of *yn* and *mewn*. §§ **437–9 Gram.**

5. Note the various prepositions that can be used to translate the different meanings of the English prepositions *from* (§§ **440–4 Gram.**), *above, after, at, before, by, for, in, on, over, to* and *with*.

6. The noun element in prepositional phrases should be noticed, together with the fact that the Genitive case rather than the Accusative follows the " compound preposition " that ends with such a noun element. **See §§ 290–1, 297–8 Gram.**

VOCABULARY 12.

NOUNS.

arian (*money*), *m.*
athraw (*teacher*), *m.*
awr (*hour*), *f.*
blwyddyn (*year*), *f.*
bore (*morning*), *m.*
brenin (*king*), *m.*
cae (*field*), *m.*
canol (*middle*), *m.*
cartref (*home*), *m.*
dadl (*debate, discussion*), *f.*
dydd (*day*), *m.*
dyffryn (*valley*), *m.*
ffenestr (*window*), *f.*
ffon (*stick*), *f.*
gair (*word*), *m.* ; gair am air (*word for word*).
gelynion (*foes*), *pl.*
golwg (*sight*) *m.*
gwers (*lesson*), *f.*
gwlad (*country*), *f.*
gwlaw (*rain*), *m.*
hwyr (*evening*), *m.*
llaw (*hand*), *f.*
Lloegr (*England*).
llong (*ship*), *f.*
masnachwr (*tradesman*), *m.*

milwyr (*soldiers*), *pl.*
mis (*month*), *m.*
modrwy (*ring*), *f.*
naw o'r gloch (*nine o'clock*).
pla (*plague*), *m.*
pobl (*people*).
pryd (*time*), *m.*
pwnc (*subject*), *m.*
rhoddion (*gifts*), *f.*
rhywbeth (*something*).
stori (*story*), *f.*
tarddiad (*source*), *m.*
tref (*town*), *f.*
tywyllwch (*darkness*), *m.*
wythnos (*week*), *f.*

VERBS.

Af (*I will go*).
arhosodd (*he stayed, remained*).
aros (*to wait*) ; gallai aros (*could wait*).
bod (*to be*).
cefais (*I found*). Aor. S. 1.
clywais (*I heard*) ; clywed (*to hear*).
derbyniasom (*we received*).

VOCABULARY 12 *(continued)*—

VERBS *(continued)*—

disgynai *(was falling)*.
dos *(go thou)*.
dywed *(he says, tells;* also
    Imper. 2. S. *tell)*, dywedwch
    (tell).
dychwelodd *(he returned)*.
edrychai *(he was looking)*.
gad *(let)* Imper.
galw *(to call)*; gelwch *(call)*,
    Imper. P. 2.
gallu *(to be able)*, nis gallai
    (he could not).
gweled *(to see)*.
gan *(with)*, used with the
    verb 'bod' *(to be)*. Y mae
    gennyf (lit., *there is with
    me, I have)*, mae gennych
    (you have), a oes ganddo
    (has he ?), nid oes gennym
    (we have not).
rhed *(runs)*.
rhoddwch *(give)*, Imper. 2. P.
safodd *(he stood)*.
siaradaf *(I will talk)*
ymwelodd *(he visited)*.

ADJECTIVES AND ADVERBS.

braidd, o'r braidd *(hardly)*.
cymaint *(so many)*.
dau *(two)*.
dieithr *(strange)*.
doe, y 'ddoe *(yesterday)*.
fel *(as, like)*.
heddyw *(to-day)*.
liw nos *(by night)*.
mil *(thousand)*.
pob amser *(all time, always)*.
tlws *(beautiful, pretty)*.
un *(one)*.
yn awr *(now)*.
yna *(then)*.
yn ol *(ago)*.
ymhen *(at the end)* (= yn +
    pen).

PRONOUNS.

(pa) beth ? *(what ?)*
efe *(he)*.
ei *(his,* or *her)*.
ereill *(others)*.
hwn, hon *(this)*, *m.*, *f.*
ni *(we)*.
wrtho'i hun *(by himself)*.

EXERCISE 25.

(*a*) Translate into. English :—

1. Arhosodd wrtho'i hun am flwyddyn yn y tŷ gerllaw'r
ysgol. 2. Edrychai'r plant trwy'r ffenestr ar y gwlaw
a ddisgynai ar ben y blodau. 3. Af at y masnachwr i
weled a oes ganddo rywbeth heb law hwn. 4. Gelwch
ymhen mis gyda ni, oblegid nid oes arian gennym heddyw.
6. Rhed yr afon hon trwy ddyffryn tlws o'i tharddiad
hyd y mor. 7. Safodd yng nghylch mil o filwyr yng
ngwydd y brenin ddoe am tuag awr. 8. Dywed wrthynt

fod y pwnc uwchlaw dadl mewn gwlad rydd fel hon.
9. Oddeutu blwyddyn yn ôl ymwelodd â'n tref er gwae-
tha'r pla oedd ynddi. 10. Gad imi glywed oddiwrthyt
o fewn wythnos ar ol i ti alw yn y lle.

(*b*) Translate into Welsh :—

1. There was no ship in sight until evening, and then it
could hardly be seen on account of the darkness. 2. The
boys laugh at him in school because he is always behind
with his lesson. 3. I will talk with you about this
subject in a day or two. 4. Tell me the story word for
word, for I have heard that you were in the place at
the time. 5. He returned by night to his home, for
he could not wait for the morning. 6. Give her the
book you have in your hand. 7. Among so many
strange people what is one friend against several foes?
8. Besides these books I have others in that house by
the river. 9. I found the ring in the middle of the field
with your stick near it. 10. We have received gifts
from our teacher who is now in England.

,

THE VERB-NOUN.

The Verb-noun serves for so many important and idiomatic uses in Welsh that the student should make a special study of its constructions. It is treated in Syntax more like a **noun** than a verb in Welsh, therefore care should be taken not to regard it as an exact equivalent of the English infinitive. **See §§ 536-7 Gram.** The preposition *to*, for example, which marks the English infinitive is not to be translated into Welsh, except in the case of a limited number of verbnouns. **See § 333 Cautions. Gram.** In translating from English into Welsh, the learner should avoid using too many abstract nouns ending in *-iad* or *-iaeth* by giving the preference to verb-nouns. So idiomatic are some of the constructions of the Welsh verb-noun that the student should carefully notice the *literal* meanings given within the brackets after the examples found in the Grammar.

That the Welsh verb-noun is practically always to be treated in Syntax as a noun can be seen from the following facts :—

1. A knowledge of the finite verb and its conjugations is not necessary for understanding the verb-noun. Consequently its study is placed before that of the verb proper.

2. The Welsh verb has no infinitive mood or participle ; hence the noun infinitive, gerundial infinitive, the participle, gerund and verbal noun of English are all to be translated into Welsh by means of verb-nouns, either used alone or preceded by a suitable preposition. **See § 229 Gram.**

3. A verb-noun is so called because it is made from a verbal stem ; and although there is little or no change in the form itself, yet it has a definite noun function in its clause. For the endings **see §§ 230-239 Gram.**

4. The Welsh verb-noun may take the article, be qualified by an adjective, be used as the subject of a verb **§ 538,** follow a transitive verb as its object **§§ 539, 330,** be

governed by a preposition, and assume the genitive case construction. §§ **540-1.**

NOTE. It should be noted that the noun that follows a verb-noun is in the Genitive rather than the Accusative relation, and retains the Radical or unmutated form of its initial consonant. Compare " clywed canu " (*to hear singing*) with " clywais ganu " (*I heard singing*). §§ **542-3; 378-9 Gram.**

Particular attention should also be given to the extensive use of *Prepositions with Verb-nouns.* See §§ **240, 537, 546-9 Gram.**

> (*a*) The so-called compound or periphrastic tenses are thus to be regarded and parsed. For example, " yr wyf wedi bod yn credu " (*I have been believing*), is made up of the pre-verbal particle *yr*, the verb *wyf* (I am), the preposition *wedi* governing the verb-noun *bod*, and the preposition *yn* governing the verb-noun *credu.* See §§ **184-7 Gram.**
>
> (*b*) The English participle is always to be represented in Welsh by a preposition and a verb-noun. See §§ **546-556 Gram.**
>
> (*c*) Subordinate clauses of an adverbial character can practically always be expressed by means of prepositions with verb-nouns. For example, the preposition **cyn** (*before*) or **wedi** (*after*), followed by a verb-noun, can be used under certain conditions in a temporal clause. See § **347 b Gram.** Similarly, for causal clauses **see** § **349 b** ; for final clauses, § **351** ; for consecutive clauses, § **352 b** ; for conditional clauses, § **357** ; for concessive clauses, § **358 b** ; and for noun clauses of statement, **see** § **367 Gram.**

To know how to express the agent with a verb-noun **see** §§ **241, 544 Gram.**

VOCABULARY 13.

NOUNS.	gwaith (*work*), *m.*
adnod (*verse*), *f.*	gwir (*truth*), *m.*
bywyd (*life*), *m.*	Joseph (*Joseph*).
ffair (*fair*), *f.*	Nadolig (*Christmas*), *m.*

VOCABULARY **13** *(continued)*—

NOUNS *(continued)*—
nos *(night)*, *f.*
ochr *(side)*, *f.*
oed *(age)*, *m.*
pennod *(chapter)*, *f.*
proffwyd *(prophet)*, *m.*

ADJECTIVES AND ADVERBS.
ail *(second)*.
angenrheidiol *(necessary)*.
araf *(slow)*.
adref *(home)*.
allan *(out)*.
cyflym *(quick)*.
cywilyddus *(shameful)*.
da *(good)*, yn dda *(well)*.
doeth *(wise)*.
dynol *(human)*.
dwyfol *(divine)*.
eto *(again)*.
hoff *(fond)*.
iachus *(healthy)*.
iawn *(very)*, as in "mawr
    iawn" *(very much)*.
ni (negative adv.), as in ni
    allaf *(I cannot)*.
rhy *(too)*.
yna *(then)*.
yno *(there)*.

PRONOUNS, PREPOSITIONS
AND CONJUNCTIONS.
ti *(thou)*; ei *(his)*; eich *(your)*.
hyn *(this)*.
imi *(to me)*; iddo *(to him)*.
o honof (lit., *out of me*)
    translates the agent with
    a verb-noun.

gan *(by)*; i *(to)*; yn *(in)*.
dan *(under)*; nes *(until)*.
ar *(upon, of)*; gyda (=gyd + a
    with).
wrth   *(by)*;   tros   *(over)*;
    gennyf *(with me)*.
er *(although)*; ar *(about to)*
    pan *(when)*.

VERBS AND VERB-NOUNS.
aeth *(he went)*.
aros *(to stay)*, *v.n.*
atebodd *(he answered)*.
blino *(to be tired)*, *v.n.*
bod *(to be, being)*, *v.n.*
bum *(I have been)*.
bydd *(be)*, Imper.; byddi
    (thou shalt be).
canu *(to sing)*, *v.n.*
cardota *(to beg)*, *v.n.*
cerdded *(to walk)*, *v.n.*
cloddio *(to dig)*, *v.n.*
cneua *(to go a-nutting)*, *v.n.*
cyrhaeddodd *(he arrived)*.
cysgu *(to sleep)*, *v.n.*
chwareu *(to play)*, *v.n.*
chwenychent *(they desired)*,
    Imperf. P. 3.
daeth *(he came)*.
darllenwch *(read)*. Imper. P. 2.
dechreu *(to begin)*, *v.n.*
dewch *(come)*, Imper. P. 2.
dweyd, dywedyd *(to say)*, *v.n.*
dyfod *(to come)*, *v.n.*
eistedd *(to sit)*, *v.n.*
gadawer *(let)*, Imper. Impers
gallaf *(I can)*.
gweithio *(to work)*, *v.n.*

VOCABULARY 13 *(continued)*—

VERBS AND VERB - NOUNS
(continued)—
gwerthu *(to sell), v.n.*
gwnaeth *(it made, set).*
gwneud camsyniad *(to err), v.n.*
gwrando *(to hear, listen), v.n.*
hoffaf *(I like).*
llarpio *(to devour), v.n.*
llarpiwyd *(he was devoured).*
maddeu *(to forgive), v.n.*
medru *(to be able)*; ar fedr
  (about to).
meddwl *(to think, thinking),
  v.n.*

methu *(to fail), v.n.*
myned *(to go), v.n.*
oeri *(to grow cold), v.n.*
parha *(he continues).*
parodd *(it set, it caused).*
prynu *(to buy), v.n.*
siarad *(to speak), v.n.*
wylo *(to weep), v.n.*
ymadael *(to leave), v.n.*
ymddengys *(he appears, seems)*
yr oeddwn *(I was).*
yr wyf, y mae, sydd *(I am,
  he is, it is).*
ystyried *(to consider), v.n.*

EXERCISE 26.

(*a*) Translate into English :—

1. Cerdded sydd iachus. 2. Y mae yn rhy hoff o
gysgu. 3. Yna yr atebodd y proffwyd gan ddywedyd,
" Gan farw ti a fyddi farw." 4. Dewch i gneua. 5.
Daeth adref dan wylo. 6. Bum yn y ffair yn prynu a
gwerthu, nes blino o honof. 7. Yr wyf—a dweyd y
gwir—wedi blino ar y gwaith. 8. Gan larpio y llarpiwyd
Joseph. 9. Y mae'n oeri gyda'r nos. 10. Gwnaeth
i mi ddyfod ac eistedd wrth ei ochr. 11. Ymddengys
ei fod yn ddyn doeth. 12. Darllenwch y bennod eto
gan ddechreu gyda'r ail adnod.

(*b*) Translate into Welsh :—

1. Sleeping is necessary to life. 2. I like your sing-
ing very much. 3. But he answered and said, " I can-
not dig, to beg I am ashamed." 4. This set him
thinking. 5. Considering his age the boy did well.
6. He continues to work, although he failed. 7. Being
tired of the work, the man went home. 8. To err is
human, to forgive divine. 9. I was about to leave when
he arrived. 10. Be quick to hear and slow to speak.
11. They desired to stay there over Christmas. 12. Let
the children go out to play.

THE VERB.

Because of its difficulty, the study of the Welsh Verb has been kept to the last, and it is now suggested that the student should take up the Notes and the Exercises in the following order :—

1. As a general introduction read §§ **177–194 ; 203–208 b ; 279–281 ; 301–305 ; 316 ; 317–323 ; 324–326 Grammar.**
2. The Verb **Wyf** (*I am*).
3. The ordinary simple verb, (Personal forms) for the Present Indicative and Aorist.
4. The Impersonal or Passive Verb.
5. The Imperative and Subjunctive Moods.
6. Special uses of the Tenses, Imperfect, Pluperfect, etc.
7. Contracted and Irregular Verbs.

The Verb Wyf (*I am*).

In the study of the verb **Wyf** the following features should be noticed :—

(*a*) The Welsh Verb has no auxiliaries of voice, mood and tense like the English verb. The verb **Wyf** is always a notional verb and its use in the so-called Compound Tenses is not analogous with the use of the auxiliaries in English. For example, the periphrastic form **yr oedd wedi dysgu** may be used to translate the Pluperfect *he had learnt* instead of the simple form **dysgasai** ; yet, when parsed separately, the words are respectively—yr (Pre-verbal particle), oedd (3rd sing. Past Imperfect of verb wyf), wedi (Preposition governing dysgu) dysgu (Verb-noun, accusative case). In the same way all the Compound Tenses given in § **184 Gram.** may be compared with their corresponding simple forms in the paradigm of **Dysgaf,** § **209 a.** For the parsing of Compound Tenses, see §§ **524–5 Gram.**

(*b*) The paradigm of **Wyf** in§ **195 a and b** should be carefully learnt. It should be noted that in the case of the verb **wyf** only, are the Present and Future tenses, the Past Imperfect Continuous and Past Imperfect Habitual

distinguished by separate forms. **Byddwn** is the only form that occurs more than once in the paradigm ;—it may be 1st plur. Future Indicative, 1st sing. Past Imperfect Habitual Indicative and 1st plur. Imperative.

(c) The most difficult feature in connexion with the verb **wyf** for an Englishman to master is the use of the forms **Mae, yw, oes,** and **sydd** to translate the 3rd sing. present Indicative *he, she,* or *it is.* Study very carefully §§ **484-470 Gram.** The distinction in meaning and usage may be illustrated by means of the following sentences :—

Efe yw'r brenin ; lit., *The king is he.*
> Here the Predicate pronoun precedes the verb and the true Subject follows.

Efe sydd frenin ; lit., *It is he that is king.*
> Here the pronoun is Subject and precedes the verb in an Affirmative clause of the Inverted order.

Y mae efe yn frenin ; lit., *He is king.*
> Here *mae* is used in an Affirmative clause of the Normal order.

Nid oes yma frenin ; lit., *There is no king here.*
> Here *oes* is used in a Negative clause of the Normal order with an Indefinite Subject. Had the Subject been Definite the verb would have been *yw*, as

Nid yw efe yn frenin ; lit., *He is not a king.*

VOCABULARY 14.

NOUNS.

Amser (*time*), *m.*
athraw (*teacher*), *m.*
awdwr (*author*), *m.*
bachgen (*boy*), *m.*
bara (*bread*), *m.*
brawd (*brother*), *m.*
byd (*world*), *m.*
cae (*field*), *m.*
Caerdydd (*Cardiff*), *f.*
cyfeillion (*friends*), *pl. m.*

cynrychiolydd (*representative*), *m.*
chwaer (*sister*), *f.*
dosbarth (*class*), *m.*
gwraig (*wife, woman*), *f.*
heddwch (*peace*), *m.*
hynafgwr (*old man, elder*), *m.*
llyfr (*book*), *m.*
llyfrgell (*library, bookcase*), *f.*
llythyr (*letter*), *m.*
modd (*mode, way*), *m.*

VOCABULARY 14 (*continued*)—

NOUNS (*continued*)—
morwyn (*maid*), *f.*
pentref (*village*), *m.*
rhyddid (*liberty*), *m.*
tadau (*fathers*), *m. pl.*
yspryd (*spirit*), *m.*

VERBS.

cael (*to have*), *v.n.*
canu (*to sing, singing*), *v.n.*
credu (*to believe, believing*), *v.n.*
cyfod (*arise*), Imper.
chwareu (*to play*), *v.n.*
chwilio (*to search*), *v.n.*
dianc (*to escape*), *v.n.*
dylai (*he should*).
galw (*to call*), *v.n.*
gall (*he can*).
gallant (*they can*).
gorffwys (*to rest*), *v.n.*
gweithio (*to work, working*), *v.n.*
gwella (*to improve*), *v.n.*
gwneud (*to do, doing*), *v.n.*
am wneud (*for doing, anxious to do*).
marw (*to die*), *v.n.*
methu (*to fail, failing*), *v.n.*
myned (*to go*), *v.n.*
nofio (*to swim*), *v.n.*
ofni (*to fear*), nac ofna (*be not afraid*), Imper.
tyred, tyrd (*come*), Imper.

ADJECTIVES AND ADVERBS.

acw (*yonder*).
ag, a (*as*).
boddlon (*willing*).
buan (*soon*).

canys (*for, because*).
dewr (*brave*).
diweddar (*late*).
doe, y ddoe (*yesterday*).
eto (*again*).
felly (*so, thus*).
gartref (*at home*).
gynt (*formerly*).
heddyw (*to-day*).
hefyd (*also*).
heibio (*by*).
hir, yn hir (*for long*).
lle (*where*).
newydd (*new*).
nid, nad (*not*).
o'r blaen (*before*).
os, pe (*if*).
parod (*ready*).
pob amser (*always*).
tebyg (*like*).
un (*one, same*).
unwaith (*once*).
weithiau (*sometimes*).
yma (*here*).
yna (*then, there*).
yno (*there*).

PRONOUNS AND PREPOSITIONS.

dim (*nothing*).
eiddo pwy ? (*whose ?*)
pawb (*all*).
rhywun (*someone*).
yr hwn (*he who*).
allan o (*from*).
am dano (*for it*).
arno (*upon it*).
gyda hwynt (*with them*).
iddo (*to him*).

EXERCISE 27.

(*a*) Translate into English :—

1. Pwy oedd y bachgen dewr acw ?   2. Cyfod, canys dyn yw yntau hefyd.   3. Pwy nid yw yn methu weithiau ?   4. Da yw Duw i bawb ; byddwn ninnau dcbyg iddo.   5. Myned y mae amser heibio.   Byddai felly i'n tadau.   6. Y mae'r plant yn yr un ysgol heddyw ag y byddem ni gynt.   7. Yr ydym yn credu nad yw ei wraig gartref.   8. Nid oes hynafgwr yn y pentref y byddwch yn myned iddo.   9. A yw eich tad yn y tŷ ?   Nac ydyw, ond bydd yma'n fuan.   10. A oes heddwch ?   Oes, ond ni fu felly bob amser.   11. Os yw dy fam yn foddlon, tyr'd i chwareu gyda mi.   12. Os oes modd gwella arno yr ydym am wneud.   13. Pwy sydd yn canu ?   Fy chwaer sydd yn canu.   14. Lle y mae Ysbryd Duw yno y mae rhyddid.   15. Pe buasit ti yma ni buasai farw fy mrawd.

(*b*) Translate into Welsh :—

1. This is the letter.   Who is its author ?   2. The sheep are in the field.   Whose are they ?   3. Nothing is new for long in this world.   4. He has been our representative once, let him be again.   5. His father works in Cardiff, where he had been working before.   6. Who is as fond of the children as their mother ?   7. Who art thou ?   It is I, be not afraid.   8. He who is working is the one who should rest.   9. If some one is at home he can have the book.   10. If the friends are not ready we shall be late.   11. Is there a way of escape ?   Yes, if they are able to swim.   12. Is that book from the library ?   Yes, I have been searching for it.   13. There is no bread in the house where you were wont to call.   14. The teacher is not with his class, nor has he been with it to-day.   15. The maid will be in the house where she was yesterday.

The Ordinary Simple Verb.

(Active Voice, Indicative Mood, Present and Aorist Tenses, Personal Conjugation.)

These Notes and Exercises are intended to help the student to obtain a firm grasp of the general features of the ordinary verb in its most frequently used Voice, Mood and Tenses.

(a) To begin, the paradigm of **Dysgaf** (*I learn*) should be learnt. **See § 209 a Gram.** Then, note the change of vowel that follows inflexion in certain stems § **210 ;** the contractions of verbal stems ending in *-w,* §§ **221–2 ;** and the conjugation of contracted stems in *ó,* and *-há,* §§ **223 a, 224 a Gram.**

(b) The formation of the 3rd sing. Present Indicative (**see** § **211 Gram.**) requires special attention, for classical Welsh writers have always preferred this terse and strong form of the 3rd sing. Present Indic. to the colloquial form that ends in *-a.* A special exercise is given on this form.

(c) The pairs of meanings—Present and Future, Aorist and Perfect—should be carefully distinguished. **See § 467 Gram.** Note the various uses of the Present tense, especially the Historic Present in §§ **472–9.** The frequent use of the Aorist as the narrative tense, and as the form to translate the English Past tense of Action but not of Habit should be noted. **See §§ 507–514 Gram.**

(d) The Indicative is the Mood usually employed to express a *statement of fact* in a simple sentence (§ **340**), in a Relative clause of a Complex sentence (§ **364**), and in a Dependent Noun clause (§ **365**). The Indicative may also be used in Temporal clauses (§ **347 a Rule 1**), in Causal clauses (§ **349 a**), in Consecutive clauses (§ **352 a**), and in Conditional clauses with *os.* (§ **352 Gram.**)

Vocabulary 15.

NOUNS.	
Adeiladau (*buildings*), *pl. m.*	bwyd (*food*), *m.*
Aifft (*Egypt*), *f.*	cais (*request*), *m.*
amser (*time*), *m.*	camsyniad (*mistake*), *m.*
anialwch (*wilderness*), *m.*	cwbl (*all, the whole*).
Arglwydd (*Lord*), *m.*	cyfamod (*covenant*), *m.*
	cyfamser (*meantime*), *m.*

VOCABULARY 15 *(continued)*—

NOUNS *(continued)*—
cyfiawn *(righteous)*, *m.*
diafol *(devil)*, *m.*
drws *(door)*, *m.*
eira *(snow)*, *m.*
Ethiop *(Ethiopian)*, *m.*
gelynion *(enemies)*, *pl.*
gwellt *(straw)*, *m.*
gwers *(lesson)*, *f.*
gwlad *(land, country)*, *f.*
Israel *(Israel)*.
llew *(lion)*, *m.*
llythyr *(letter)*, *m.*
manna *(manna)*, *m.*
nos *(night)*, *f.*
oes *(lifetime)*, *f.*
papurau *(papers)*, *pl.*
pobl *(people)*.
sôn *(talk, mention)*, *m.*
tân *(fire)*, *m.*
tir *(land)*, *m.*
tref *(town)*, *f.*
ych *(ox)*, *m.*

ADJECTIVES AND ADVERBS.

adref *(homewards)*.
bob dydd *(every day, daily)*.
cyn wynned *(as white)*.
dyma *(behold ; these are the*
  men=dyma'r dynion).
fel *(like)*.
gwerthfawr *(valuable)*.
heddyw *(to-day)*:
hir *(long)*.
mwyaf *(most)*.
nes *(until)*.
newydd *(new)*.
o bell *(from afar)*.

o'r blaen *(before)*.
o gwbl *(at all)*.
pan *(when)*.
ychydig *(little)*.
yfory *(to-morrow)*.
yna *(then)*.
yn ddiwyd *(diligently)*.
yn fuan *(soon)*.
yn sych *(dry)*.

VERBS.

brysiaf *(I hasten)*.
cael *(to get)*.
cychwyn *(to start)*.
gofynnaf *(I ask)*.
gorffwys *(to rest)*.
gwn *(I know)*. *See* § 257
  Gram.)
gwthio *(to push)*.
The rest of the verbs used
  are given in section *a* of
  Exercise 28.

PRONOUNS, PREPOSITIONS,
ETC.

ag ef *(with him)*.
am *(of, about, for)* ; am dano
  (about it).
cyn *(before)*.
iddo *(to him)*.
iti *(to thee)*.
oddiwrth *(from)*, oddiwrthyt
  (from thee).
oni *(unless)*.
tros *(over)*, tros y bwrdd
  (overboard).
trwy *(through, during)*.
ymha le *(where ?)*.

EXERCISE 28.

(*a*) Write out the 3rd sing. Present Indicative of the following verbs :—

Adferaf (*I restore*), adroddaf (*I relate*), agoraf (*I open*), arhosaf (*I stay*), atebaf (*I answer*), blysiaf (*I long*), brysiaf (*I hasten*), cadwaf (*I keep*), caraf (*I love*), clywaf (*I hear*), collaf (*I lose*), cryfhaf (*I strengthen*), cyfodaf (*I rise*), cymeraf (*I take*), dangosaf (*I show*), datodaf (*I untie*), deffroaf (*I awake*), diffoddaf (*I extinguish, put out*), dodaf (*I put*), dychwelaf (*I return*), edrychaf ar (*I look at*), esgynaf (*I ascend*), ffoaf (*I flee*), galwaf (*I call*), golchaf (*I wash*), gosodaf (*I place*), gwaredaf (*I deliver*), gwnaf (*I make, do*), gweithiaf (*I work*), gwrandawaf ar (*I listen to*), gwrthwynebaf (*I resist*), llosgaf (*I burn*), neidiaf (*I leap*), parhaf (*I continue*), poraf (*I graze*), rhoddaf (*I give*), safaf (*I stand*), siaradaf (*I speak*), tarawaf (*I strike*), taflaf (*I throw*), torraf (*I cut*), trof (*I turn*), ymadawaf (*I leave*).

(*b*) Translate into English :—

1. Dysgant wers newydd bob dydd.   2. Gweithiodd yn ddiwyd drwy ei oes.   3. Clywsant sôn am y dyn o'r blaen.   4. Blysiodd plant Israel am wlad yr Aifft.   5. Ymha le yr arhosaist tros nos ?   6. Fe egyr y drws, os gwthiwch ychydig.   7. Yr Arglwydd a edwyn y cyfiawn.   8. Gwelsant dir eu gwlad o bell.   9. Os gwrthwynebi'r diafol efe a ffy oddiwrthyt.   10. Efe a ylch yr Ethiop cyn wynned a'r eira.   11. Carant sôn am Gymru— gwlad y gân.   12. Cymerasom fwyd cyn cychwyn o'r tŷ.   13. Efe a geidw ei gyfamod â'i bobl.   14. Ac os cyll efe un ddafad ni orffwys nes ei chael.

(*c*) Translate into Welsh :—

1. You threw the most valuable papers into the fire.   2. We stood and looked at the buildings for a long time.   3. He did not listen to his father at all.   4. The lion shall eat grass like the ox.   5. If it continues dry we shall leave to-morrow.   6. Shall I show you the town ? Yes, before we return homewards.   7. Our fathers did eat the manna in the wilderness.   8. Then shall I answer his

letter and show him his mistake. 9. When I awake he also awakes. 10. These are the men who took the sheep from the field. 11. If it break we shall throw the whole thing overboard. 12. I know that he will return, but what shall I do in the meantime ? 13. The fire will soon burn the house unless we hasten to put it out. 14. If thou wilt love the Lord thy God and keep His covenant, He will deliver thee from thy enemies.

THE IMPERSONAL VERB.

In Early Welsh the verb had only one Voice—the Active ; but Modern Welsh, mainly because of a conscious effort to translate the English Passive construction, has added to its peculiar Impersonal (or Subjectless) Conjugation of the verb fresh meanings and applications which justify the inclusion of the Passive Voice in the present Grammars. The clearest instance of such an adaptation of the Impersonal verb to express a Passive Voice is seen in a sentence of the Inverted Order where the noun or pronoun preceding the verb is now regarded as its Subject, as

Dyn a welwyd (*A man was seen*). **See § 461 Gram.**
But the older construction still survives in Welsh in the case of an Impersonal verb preceded by a Postvocalic Personal Pronoun which is always an Accusative, as

Fe'm gwelir (*I am seen ; lit., There is seeing in respect to me*). **See §§ 177-8 Gram.**

The impersonal forms are also found in the case of intransitive verbs, such as eir (*someone goes*).

The value of such a construction as that of the Welsh Impersonal Verb can be realized from § **316 note 5 Gram.** It would be well, therefore, to master at the outset the points of similarity and difference between the Welsh Impersonal construction and the English Passive Voice, so that the idioms connected with the former may not be needlessly disregarded in translation and composition. For such purposes, therefore, the following rules should be observed :—

(*a*) The English Passive Voice can be expressed in Welsh, either by an Impersonal verb preceded by an Accusative Postvocalic Personal Pronoun or by an Impersonal verb

followed by a Simple Personal Pronoun in what is now
the Nominative Case ; as

> Fe'th ddysgir   (*Thou art taught* ;   lit., *there is
> teaching in respect of thee*).

Dysgir di (*Thou art taught*).   **See §§ 226-7 Gram.**
Colloquial Welsh uses the auxiliary *cael* with a verb-noun
qualified by a possessive adjective to express the English
Infinitive Passive, as

> Yr wyt yn cael dy ddysgu (*Thou art being taught*,
> lit., *Thou art getting thy teaching*).   **See § 228
> and § 280 a Gram.**

The form with the Accusative Postvocalic pronoun can
only be used after the particles *ni* and *na* (negatives), *fe*
(introductory or formal pronoun), *oni* (conjunction) and *y*
(relative pronoun or pre-verbal particle) ; as

> Ni'm cofir mwy (*I shall not be remembered any more*).
> Ymguddiaf fel na'm gweler (*I hide myself so that
> I may not be seen*).
> Fe'th welwyd ganddo (*Thou hast been seen by him*).
> Oni'm credir beth a wnaf ?   (*Unless I am believed
> what shall I do ?*)
> Gwn y'ch cospir (*I know you shall be punished*).

(*b*) The conjugation of the Welsh Impersonal verb is simple
and uniform.   The verbal endings are only five in number
and can be added to any verb, the changes in the personal
Subject (originally the Accusative) being denoted in
the noun or pronoun and not in the verb.   **See § 208 b
Gram.**   Learn and compare the Impersonal forms of *wyf*
(§ **195 b**), *dysgaf* (§ **209 b**), *trôf* (§ **223 b**) and *cryfhâf* (§ **224 b**).

(*c*) In transposing an English verb of the Active Voice into
the Passive, the object of the former verb becomes the
subject of the latter, and the subject which preceded the
active verb follows the passive and is governed by a
preposition.   Similarly in Welsh the object of an Active
verb is regarded as the subject of the Impersonal verb,
while the subject of the active verb is connected with
the passive or impersonal verb by the preposition **gan**
(*by, with*).   **See § 327 and Note ;   also §§ 461-2 Gram.**

Welsh has no **Middle Voice** like Greek, but as a substitute for

it, the prefix **ym-** (*round about, Cp. Lat. ambi*) may be attached to certain verbs. To some of those verbs the **ym-** adds a reflexive notion (§ **463**), to others the idea of interest (§ **464**), while to a few it gives a reciprocal force (§ **465**) ; as

> Ymolchaf (*I wash myself*).
> Ymgynghoraf (*I consult—for my own interest*).
> Ymladdwn (*We fight—strike one another*).

VOCABULARY 16.

NOUNS.

addysg (*education*), *f.*
arian (*money*), *m.*
bywyd (*life*), *m.*
cloff (*lame*).
cyd-efrydwyr (*fellow-students*).
cymydogion (*neighbours*).
dosbarth (*class*), *m.*
dyddiau (*days*).
ffordd (*way*), *f.*
gewynau (*muscles*).
glan (*edge, side*), glan y môr (*sea-side*).
gofal (*care*), *m.*
gweithred (*act*), gweithred-oedd (*actions*).
haf (*summer*), *m.*
llew (*lion*), *m.*
llwyddiant (*progress*), *m.*
meddygon (*doctors*).
newyddion (*news*).
punt (*pound*) can punt (£100).

VERBS AND VERB-NOUNS.

achub (*to save*).
adwaenir (*is known*).
aros (*to stay*).
barnu (*to judge*).
blinir (*is troubled*).

boddlonir (*is satisfied*).
buasai (*it would have been*).
canmolir (*shall be praised*).
clywed (*to hear*), clywir (*is heard*).
collwyd (*was lost*).
cymeradwyir (*is recommended*)
cymerasid (*had been taken*).
daliwyd (*was caught*).
darllenwyd (*was read*).
dyfod, dod (*to come, coming*).
gallesid (*might have been*).
gorchfygu (*conquering*).
gwelir (*is seen*), gwelsid (*had been seen*).
gwerthwyd (*was sold*).
gwobrwyer (*may be rewarded*).
lladrata (*stealing*).
llafuriwch (*labour, work*), Imper. 2 pl.
ofnir (*is feared*, Impers).
troer (*be it turned*) Impers.
tybid (*was considered*), tybie-sid (*had been thought*).
ydys (*it is*).
ymarferwn (*let us exercise ourselves*).
ymdeimlo a (*to be disposed to*).
ymddwyn (*to behave*).
ymffrostio (*to pride oneself*).

VOCABULARY 16 (*continued*)—

VERBS (*continued*)—

ymgryfhau (*to strengthen one-self*).
ymgrymed (*let him bow him-self*).
ymguddiwch (*hide yourselves*).
ymladdai (*was fighting*).
ymolchaf (*I wash myself*).
ymwelaf â (*I visit*).
ysgrifennu (*to write*).

ADJECTIVES AND ADVERBS.

allan (*out*).
aml, yn aml (*often*).
beunyddiol (*daily*).
càn (*hundred*).
cyn hir (*before long*).
da, yn dda (*good, well*).
diwyd (*energetic*).
doethach, yn ddoethach (*wiser*).
felly (*so, thus*).
ffôl (*foolish*).
ffyrnig (*fiercely*).

galluog, (*clever*).
gwell (*better*).
haws, (*easier*).
hwyrach (*perhaps*).
llawer (*much*).
llynedd (*last year*).
llawr, i lawr (*down*, lit., *to the floor*).
màn, yn y man (*by and by*).
mawr, yn fawr iawn (*very much*).
oni (*if not*).
pob (*every*).
tebyg (*like, similar*).

PRONOUNS, PREPOSITIONS, ETC.

am (*for, about*).
arno (*upon it*).
ato (*to him*).
gan (*with, by*); gennym (*with us*).
pawb (*all*).
wrth (*at, by*).

EXERCISE 29.

(*a*) Translate into English :—

1. Ymolchaf yn nwfr y môr yn feunyddiol. 2. Clywir son lawer am well addysg i'r plant y dyddiau hyn. 3. Pa fodd y mae fy mab yn ymddwyn yn ei ddosbarth ? 4. Os am ymgryfhau, ymarferwn ein gewynau yn aml. 5. Yr ydys yn clywed newyddion ffôl felly yn aml. 6. Llafuriwch yn ddiwyd fel y'ch gwobrwyer. 7. Pe gwelsid y weithred buasai yn haws ei barnu. 8. Ymguddiwch canys y mae'r gelyn yn dod. 9. Ymgrymed pawb i lawr i'r brenin. 10. Na throer y cloff allan o'r ffordd. 11. Oni ddarllenwyd gennym lyfr tebyg y llynedd. 12. Fe'ch canmolir yn y man. 13. Fe'u clywir hwy, os

na'u gwelir.   14. Tybid ef yn alluog gan ei gyd-efrydwyr.
15. Gwerthwyd y tŷ am gàn punt a chollwyd arian arno.

(*b*) Translate into Welsh :—

1. I visit the sea-side every summer.   2. Let there be
no more fear.   3. Thou shalt be seen conquering ere long.
4. They are seen at the sea-side every year.   5. I am
satisfied with his progress at school.   6. The two lions
were fighting fiercely.   7. To pride oneself is not good.
8. We give ourselves wholly to this good work.   9. I
do not feel disposed to write to him again.   10. We are
troubled very much by our neighbours.   11. It is often
recommended by doctors.   12. It had been thought wiser
to stay at home.   13. A man is known by his actions.
14. The boy was caught in the act of stealing.   15. If
care had been taken, perhaps his life might have been
saved.

THE IMPERATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

The formation of the different tenses of the Imperative
and Subjunctive Moods will cause the student no difficulty,
once he has learnt the conjugation of *dysgaf*, § **209 a, b,** *trof*,
§ **223 a, b,** *cryfhaf*, § **224 a, b Gram.**   But the Subjunctive of
wyf, § **195 a, b,** and *caf*, § **263** should be noted with care.

The **uses of the Imperative Mood** can be summarized thus :—
  (*a*) In affirmative commands use the simple Imperative.
  See § **535 a Gram.**   Note that the plural of the Impera-
  tive is the same as the plural of the Present Indicative.
  § **341 a, Note 1.**
  (*b*) A pressing request is expressed by means of the Impera-
  tive of *gwnaf* (*I do*) followed by a verb-noun as its Object.
  See §§ **341 a, Note 2 ;   280 c Gram.**
  (*c*) A polite request, which would be 2nd sing. Imper. Active
  in English, is expressed in Welsh by means of a 3rd sing.
  Imper. Impersonal.   **See** § **341 a, the N.B. Gram.**
  (*d*) In prohibitions (Negative Commands) use either *nac*
  followed by an Imperative, or the Imper. of **peidiaf**
  (*I cease*) followed by the preposition **ag** (*with*) and a verb-
  noun.   **See** §§ **341 b, Notes 1 and 2 Gram.**

F

(*e*) Concessions and suppositions may also be expressed
by means of the Imperative.   **See §§ 343, 535 b, Gram.**

The **Subjunctive Mood** is only a survival in Modern Welsh,
therefore its use can be best illustrated by quotations from
the Welsh classical writings of the past.   The student would
do well to make a list of the stereotyped Subjunctive expres-
sions and use them whenever possible in his Welsh composi-
tion, for such constructions are features of a much stronger
style than many of the substitutes used in Modern Welsh.
See § 527 Gram.   For the tenses of the Subjunctive see **§§ 193–4
Gram.**

The following are the main **uses of the Subjunctive Mood.**
(*a*) To express Wishes :

I. Affirmative
- referring to the *Future,* use the Present Subj.   **See §§ 342 note 1, 529 Gram.**
- referring to the *Present,* use the Past Imperf. Subj. with O nad (*Oh that !*)   **See § 342, note 2.**
- referring to the *Past,* use the Pluperfect Subj. with O nad (*Oh that !*).   **See § 342, note 3.**

II. Negative.
- referring to the *Present and Future,* use the Pluperfect of *wyf,* followed by the prep. *yn,* the verb-noun *peidio* and the verb-noun denoting the action required.   **See § 342, note 4 Gram.**
- referring to the *Past,* use the Pluperfect of *wyf,* followed by the prep. *wedi,* the verb-noun *peidio* and the verb-noun denoting the action required.   **See § 342, notes 4 and 5 Gram.**

(*b*) To express Purpose.   Final clauses usually take the
Subjunctive mood introduced by the Conjunctions " fel "
or "modd " (*in order that*) and "rhag " or " nad " (*lest*). **See
§§ 350–530 Gram.**
(*c*) To express Time and Place in Adverbial clauses of a
prospective or general character.   **See §§ 347 a, 348, 533
Gram.**   Note particularly the **Ever**-clauses of Time and

Place, the stereotyped expressions like "Doed a ddelo" (*come what may*) and the frequent use of the Subjunctive in Welsh Proverbs.

(*d*) To express Comparison in a prospective Adverbial clause. **See §§ 359 a, 535 Gram.** Note expressions like "Fel y gallo" (*as he may be able*), the Subjunctive after *Po* with the Superlative § **359 a, note 3,** and the Subjunctive used after a Comparative of Equality. § **532 Gram.**

(*e*) To express the verb of a Relative clause the action of which is marked as prospective or general. **See §§ 364, 533 Gram.**

(*f*) To express Result and Concession. This is only an occasional usage. **See §§ 352 a, 358 a, 532 Gram.**

(*g*) To express a negative Noun clause after verbs of commanding and warning, as well as a contingent action in an Indirect Question. **See §§ 532, 534 Gram.**

(*h*) To express Condition in *Pe*-clauses. Study carefully §§ **355, 356 Gram.**

VOCABULARY 17.

NOUNS.

addewid (*promise*), *f.*
anthem (*anthem*), *f.*
braint (*privilege*), *f.*
coron (*crown*), *f.*
cyfoeth (*riches*), *m.*
cyfrifoldeb (*responsibility*), *m.*
dadl (*debate*), *f.*
ewyllys (*will*), *f.*
ffon (*staff, walking-stick*), *f.*
ffordd (*way*), *f.*
gwr (*man*), *m.*
gwyliau (*holidays*).
helynt (*affair*), *m.*
Iuddewon (*Jews*).
Mai (*May*), *m.*
nef (*heaven*), *f.*
peth (*thing*), *m.*; peth felly (*such a thing*).

profedigaeth (*temptation*), *f.*
rhiw (*slope, hill*), *f.*
troed (*foot*), *f.*

ADJECTIVES AND ADVERBS.

cadwedig (*saved*).
deuddeg (*twelve*).
diweddaraf (*latest*: used in Welsh even when only two things are compared).
druted (*as expensive; Comp. of Equality*).
eto (*again*).
felly (*so*).
gormod (*too much*).
gwyddonol (*scientific*).
hen (*old*).
mwyaf (*greatest*).
o hyd (*always*).

VOCABULARY 17 *(continued)*—

ADJECTIVES AND ADVERBS
(continued)—

pa mor anhawdd bynnag *(however difficult)*.

tebycaf *(most likely*=Eng. *the more likely)*.

uchaf *(highest)*.

unwaith *(once)*.

yn agos *(near)*.

yn gynt *(sooner)*.

yn gywir *(correctly)*.

yn unig *(only)*.

PREPOSITIONS AND CONJUNCTIONS.

am *(for)*.

ar *(upon)*.

er *(however)* ; er mwyn *(for the sake of)*.

fel *(so that)*.

heb *(without, not)*.

hyd oni *(until, till)*.

lle bynnag *(wherever)*.

oddiwrth *(from)*.

o hyn allan *(from this time forth)*.

o na ! *(Oh that !, would that !)*

pa beth bynnag *(whatever, whatsoever)*.

pa bryd bynnag *(whenever)*.

pe *(if)*.

rhag *(lest)*.

tra *(while)*.

wrthyf *(to me)*, wrthych *(to you)*.

yn ystod *(during)*.

VERBS AND VERB-NOUNS.

adrodd *(to recite)*.

aed *(let him go, § 261 Gram.)*.

aros *(to stay)* ; arosaswn *(I had remained)*.

ato, in the phrase Na ato Duw *(God forbid)* : mutated from gato.

awn *(let us go, § 260 Gram.)*.

bai *(he were)*, bawn *(I were, § 195 a Gram.)*.

blined, na flined *(trouble not)*.

bo *(he be, § 195 a Gram.)*.

boed *(let it be)*.

buasai *(he had been, § 195 a)*.

byddi *(thou wilt be)* ; byddo *(he be)*.

cael *(to obtain, find)*.

canwn *(let us sing)*.

ceisiwch *(seek ye)*.

cofied *(let him remember)*, cofio, 3 s. Pres. Subj.)

cred *(believe)*; credaswn *(I had believed)*.

dangosed *(let him show)*.

darllener *(Please read)*, darlleno (3 s. Pres. Subj.) ; darllenwch (2 pl. Imper.)*.

defnyddiai (3 s. Past Imperf. *he used)*.

dewisai *(he wished, chose)*.

diffygiaswn *(I had fainted, 1 s. Pluperf.)*.

digio *(be offended, 3 s. Pres. Subj.)*.

dilynwn *(we will follow)*.

doed a ddelo *(come what may)*.

dos *(go)*.

dychwelwyf *(I may return, 1 s. Pres. Subj.)*.

VOCABULARY 17 *(continued)*—

VERBS *(continued)*—

dygo, a ddygo *(he may take, Pres. Subj., 3 s.)*.

dywed *(he says)*.

eloch *(2 pl. Pres. Subj. § 260, you may enter)*.

galw *(call)* ; gelwch *(call ye)*.

gallwyf *(I may be able, 1 s. Pres. Subj.)*.

galler *(it may be possible, Subj. Impers.)*.

glynwch *(cling, Imper. 2 pl.)*.

goddiwedder *(be it overtaken)*.

gorchfygu *(to defeat)*.

gorffenasai *(might have ended)*.

gweddiwch *(pray ye)*.

gwel *(see)* ; gweled *(to see, seeing)*.

gwell yw gennyt (phrase for *thou preferest*).

gwnaed *(let him do)*, gwnewch *(do)*.

henffych *(Hail ! 2 s. Pres. Subj., § 249)*.

hoffwch *(you like, 2 pl. Pres. Indic.)*.

lladd *(to kill)*, a laddo *(3 s. Pres. Subj.)*, lleddir *(shall be killed)*.

llithro *(it may slip)*.

medrai *(he could)*.

meddianwn *(let us possess)*.

mentro *(venture, risk)*.

mynno *(he will; Pres. Subj. 3 s.)*, mynnwn *(I would)* ; mynnai *(he, she, or it willed)*.

ofna *(fear thou)*.

peidiwch *(do not ye)*.

prynaf *(I shall buy)*.

pwrcasu *(to purchase)*.

syrthiai *(he might fall, 3 s. Past Imperf. Subj.)*.

tybier *(let it be supposed)*.

ymddiddan ag *(talk thou to)*.

ymffrostio *(to boast)*.

ymlidiwn *(let us pursue)*.

ymofyner *(let there be searching)*.

ystyried *(let him consider)*; ystyrio *(3 s. Pres. Subj.)*.

EXERCISE 30.

(a) Translate into English :—

1. Awn a meddianwn y wlad. 2. Gwnewch alw unwaith eto, rhag iddo ddigio. 3. Nac ofna ; cred yn unig a chadwedig fyddi. 4. Dangosed i mi'r tŷ, ac, er druted fo, mi a'i prynaf. 5. Tybier peth felly er mwyn dadl. 6. Doed a ddelo, glynwch wrthyf. 7. Henffych well ! brenin yr Iuddewon. 8. O na bawn i eto yng Nghymru ! 9. Diffygiaswn, pe na chredaswn ei addewid. 10. Po ddiweddaraf fo llyfr gwyddonol, tebycaf yw o fod yn gywir. 11. O na buasai heb weled y lle erioed ! 12. Ymofynner yn fanwl am y llyfr, fel y gallwyf ei bwrcasu. 13. Peidiwch

a mentro gormod, rhag i'ch troed lithro.   14. Mynnwn
pe nef a'i mynnai, pe deuddeng mis fo mis Mai.   15.
Ceisiwch yr Arglwydd tra y galler ei gael, gelwch arno tra
fyddo'n agos.   16. Lle bo ewyllys y mae ffordd.   17.
Defnyddiai yr hen wr ffon, fel na syrthiai ar y rhiw.   18.
A ddarlleno, ystyried ; a ystyrio, cofied ; a gofio, gwnaed.

(*b*) Translate into Welsh :—

1. Would that it were always summer ! 2. Read
whatever you like during the holidays. 3. He who kills
shall be killed. 4. Go and talk to him until I return.
5. From this time forth let no man trouble me. 6.
Pray so that ye enter not into temptation. 7. Had I
remained at home, the affair might have ended sooner.
8. Let us sing the anthem once again, however difficult it
may be. 9. God forbid that I should boast in riches.
10. Let us pursue the enemy till they be overtaken.
11. Would that you had been able to defeat them. 12.
Please read that letter again. 13. See that no man
take thy crown. 14. If thou preferest to stay, be it so.
15. He could, whenever he wished, obtain money from his
father. 16. Let him go wherever he will, we will follow
him. 17. Whatsoever he saith unto you, do it. 18.
The higher the privilege is, the greater will the responsi-
bility be.

MEANINGS OF THE TENSES.

The use of the ordinary Active Verb in the Present and
Aorist Tenses has already been illustrated in Exercise 28 of
the " Reader " ; but apart from the uses of the remaining tenses,
i.e., the Past Imperfect and Pluperfect, which will be included
in this section, the student should carefully master the manner
in which all the various shades of meaning pertaining to the
Tenses are to be expressed in Welsh.

The study of the Welsh Tenses may be followed in this
order :—
- (*a*) The four distinctive tenses of the Indicative Mood.
     See §§ 180–183 Gram.
- (*b*) The few auxiliary verbs that are sometimes used in com-
     pound tenses.   **See § 280 d, e, f Gram.**

(c) The pairs of meanings that belong to a few of the tense forms. **See §§ 467–470 Gram.**

(d) A recapitulation of the Conjugations of Wyf § **195 a, b,** Dysgaf § **209 a, b,** Trof § **223 a, b,** and Cryfhaf § **224 a, b.**

(e) For translation purposes compare the following list of the various Tense forms of English with those of Welsh and vice versa, looking up every reference made to the Grammar for fuller explanations.

PRESENT.

1. Present Indefinite
   English : I write.
   Welsh : Ysgrifenaf. **See §§ 473–4 Gram.**

2. Pres. Continuous
   English : I am writing.
   Welsh : Yr wyf yn ysgrifenu, §§ **184, 475.** Compound form only.

3. Pres. Habitual
   English : I am wont to write.
   Welsh : Byddaf yn ysgrifenu, §§ **184, 476–7.** Compound form only.

4. Pres. Perfect
   English : I have written.
   Welsh : Ysgrifenais (same as Aorist), § **514.**
   Yr wyf wedi ysgrifen-u. §§ **514–5,** Compound forms mostly used.

5. Pres. Perfect Continuous
   English : I have been writing.
   Welsh : Bum yn ysgrifenu. § **184.** Compound form only.

PAST.

1. Past Indefinite
   English : I wrote.
   Welsh : Ysgrifenais (Aorist). §§ **495, 508, 512.**

2. Past Imperfect or Continuous
   English : I was writing.
   Welsh : Ysgrifenwn. §§ **184, 493.** Yr oeddwn yn ysgrifennu. Compound form mostly used.

PAST *(continued)*—

3. Past Habitual
English : I used to write.
Welsh : Byddwn yn ysgrifenu.   §§ **184, 497–8.**

4. Past Perfect or Pluperfect
English : I had written.
Welsh : Ysgrifenaswn.   § **519.**
Yr oeddwn wedi ysgrifenu. § **184.**

5. Past Perfect Continuous
English : I had been writing.
Welsh : Buaswn yn ysgrifenu. §§ **184, 520.**

6. Future Secondary
English : I should write.
Welsh : Ysgrifenwn.   § **502.**
Buaswn yn ysgrifenu. § **503.**

7. Future Perfect.
English : I should have written.
Welsh : Ysgrifenaswn.
Buaswn wedi ysgrifenu. §§ **521–2.**

FUTURE.

1. Future Indefinite
English : I shall write.
Welsh : Ysgrifenaf (same as Present) § **480.**
Gwnaf ysgrifenu. § **481.**
Caf ysgrifenu. § **483.**

2. Fut. Continuous
English : I shall be writing.
Welsh : Byddaf yn ysgrifenu (Cp. Pres Hab.). §§ **480–1.**

3. Fut. Perfect
English : I shall have written.
Welsh : Byddaf wedi ysgrifenu. §§ **184,517.**   Always Compound.

4. Fut. Perf. Continuous
English : I shall have been writing.
Welsh : Byddaf wedi bod yn ysgrifenu. § **184.** Always Compound.

VOCABULARY 18.

NOUNS.
awr ginio (*dinner hour*), *f.*
barn (*opinion*), *f.*
blynyddoedd (*years*).
bore (*morning*), *m.*
brawd (*brother*), *m.*
cais (*request*), *m.*
cartref (*home*), *m.*
craig (*rock*), *f.*
cyfeiriad (*address*), *m.*
Cymraeg (*Welsh*), Cymru fu
  (*Wales of the past*).
daioni (*benefit*).
deuddydd (*two days*).
gonestrwydd (*honesty*), *m.*
gwair (*hay*), *m.*
iaith (*language*), *f.*
lle (*place*), *m.*
llythyr (*letter*), *m.*
nos (*night*), *f.*
papurau (*papers*).
pentref (*village*), *m.*
pwnc (*subject*), *m.*
rheswm (*reason*), *m.*
safle (*position*), *m.*
syniad (*thought*), *m.*
traddodiad (*tradition*), *m.*
wythnos (*week*), *f.*
ystraeon (*tales*).

PRONOUNS, PREPOSITIONS, ETC.
am (*for, about*), amdanoch (*for
  or about you*).
ar (*on*), arnaf (*on me*), arnynt
  (*on them*).
at (*to*).
beth (*what*), beth sy'n bod ?
  (*What is the matter*) ; beth
  ddaeth ? (*What has become ?*)

cyn (*before*).
paham (*why ?*).
pa bryd bynnag (*whenever*).
tu ol i (*behind*).

ADJECTIVES AND ADVERBS.
adref (*homewards*).
bob yn ail (*alternately*).
beunydd (*daily*).
cyfoethog (*rich*).
difyr (*interesting*).
eto (*again*).
hwn (*this*).
hyd nes (*until*).
iawn (*very*).
mynychaf (*usually, most fre-
  quently*).
neithiwr (*last night*).
nesaf (*next*).
o'r blaen (*before*).
pan (*when*).
pob (*every, all*).
yfory (*to-morrow*).
yn awr (*now*).
yn bendant (*definitely*).
yn dda (*well*).
yn egnïol (*energetically*).
yn fuan (*soon*).
yn ol (*ago*).
yn sicr (*certainly*).
yn wahanol (*differently*).

VERBS AND VERB-NOUNS.
adwaenwn (*I knew*).
af (*I shall go*) ; myned (*going*).
ameu (*to doubt*).
cael cynnyg (*to have an offer*).
cawn we shall, *Aux.*), caw-
  som (*we have found*).

VOCABULARY 18 *(continued)*—

VERBS AND VERB-NOUNS *(continued)*—

clywsom *(we have heard)*; clywed *(to hear)*; clywais *(I heard)*.

codaf *(I shall arise)*.

credu *(believing)*.

crynnu *(trembling)*.

cwrdd *(to meet)*.

cyrraedd *(reaching)*.

daeth *(he came)*; daw *(it comes)*.

darllen *(to read)*.

dechreu *(beginning)*.

disgwyl *(to expect)*.

dweyd *(to say, tell)*, dweyd ei fod *(to say that he is)*.

dychwelwyf *(I may return)*; dychwelyd *(to return)*.

dysgaswn *(I had learnt)*.

gadael *(leaving)*.

galw *(to call)*; arfer galw *(to be used to call)*; gelwi *(thou dost call)*; galwant *(they shall call)*.

gobeithiaf *(I hope)*.

gorchymynasant *(they had commanded)*.

gweithio *(to work)*.

gwelaf *(I see)*.

gwerthu *(to sell)*.

gwnaf gofio *(I shall remember)*.

gwrandawaf *(I shall hearken to)*.

gwyddwn *(I knew)*, pe gwyddech *(had you known)*.

lladd gwair *(to mow hay)*.

llosgi *(burning)*.

llwytha *(he loads)*.

siaradem *(we were talking)*.

traethodd *(he related, told)*.

troseddu *(to transgress)*.

wylodd at *(she wept at)*.

ymddwyn *(to behave)*.

ymguddio *(to hide oneself)*.

ysgrifenu *(to write)*, ysgrifenwn *(I should write)*.

EXERCISE 31.

(a) Translate into English :—

1. Yr wyt yn crynnu. Beth sy'n bod ? 2. Gwelaf le i ymguddio tu ol i'r graig. 3. Byddaf wedi bod yn ysgrifenu am ddeuddydd pan ddaw'r awr ginio. 4. Traethodd ystraeon difyr am Gymru fu. 5. Buont yn gweithio yn egniol cyn cyrraedd y safle hwn. 6. Clywsom ddweyd ei fod yn gyfoethog iawn. 7. Yr ydych wedi troseddu o'r blaen mi glywais. 8. Byddai yn dweyd ei farn yn bendant ar bob pwnc. 9. Yr oeddech wedi gwerthu'r defaid, cyn i mi gael cynnyg arnynt. 10. Buaswn yn disgwyl am danoch, hyd nes y daeth eich llythyr. 11. Pa bryd bynnag y galwant arnaf, gwrandawaf hwy. 12. Gwnaf gofio eich cais pan ddychwelwyf

adref. 13. Bydd yn lladd ei wair yr wythnos nesaf.
14. Byddi wedi clywed cyn y bore beth ddaeth o'th
frawd. 15. Gorchymynasant losgi'r papurau.

(*b*) Translate into Welsh :—

1. I shall arise and go to my father. 2. He is usually
calling every night. 3. He has believed the tradition
for years. 4. I knew your father well years ago. 5. Shall
you be going to town to-morrow ? 6. You would have
behaved differently in his house had you known. 7. We
shall meet again soon, I hope. 8. He daily loads us with
his benefits. 9. She wept at the thought of leaving
home. 10. They used to return to Wales every alternate
year. 11. I should certainly write if I knew his address.
12. We were talking about you last night. 13. You used
to call in the village years ago ; Why do you not call
now ? 14. I had learnt to read Welsh before beginning
to write the language. 15. We had found reason for
doubting his honesty.

IRREGULAR VERBS.

Defective, Anomalous or Irregular verbs constitute an
extensive class in Welsh Grammar, and in syntactical function
they follow the same rules as ordinary and regular verbs.
But because of the peculiar formation of some of their tenses,
and since others of them have no longer parts of their
conjugation in use, it is well that the student should carefully
commit to memory their surviving forms from the Grammar
and learn to use them in sentences, as the following Exercise
will illustrate.

1. Study the Compounds of *Wyf*. **See § 242 Gram.**
   - (*a*) Prepositional forms as Canfod (*perceiving*), § **248 ;**
     Hanfod (*existing*), §§ **249–250 ;** Darfod (*ending*),
     § **251 ;** Gorfod (*overcoming*), §§ **252–3 ;** Cyfarfod
     (*meeting*), § **254 Gram.**
   - (*b*) Adjectival forms as Adnabod (*knowing*), § **255 ;**
     Cydnabod (*recognizing*), § **256 ;** Gwybod (*knowing*),
     § **257 ;** Clybod (*hearing*), § **258 Gram.**

2. Study the verbs containing the roots *ag-* and *-el*. **See**
§ **243 Gram.** Namely, Af (*I go*), Deuaf (*I come*), Gwnaf
(*I make*). **See §§ 259–261 Gram.**

3. Study the verbs that omit, or apparently omit, the last consonant of their Present Stem. **See** § **244 Gram.** Namely, Caf (*I obtain*), §§ **262–264 ;** Rhoddaf (*I give*), §§ **265–266 ;** Arhosaf (*I remain*), §§ **267–268 Gram.**

4. Study the defective verbs of §§ **245–247 Gram.** Namely, Dygaf (*I bring*), §§ **245, 269 ;** Atolygaf (*I beseech*), §§ **245, 269 ;** Piau (*it belongs*), § **270 ;** Moes (*give*), Hwde (*accept*), § **271 ;** Meddaf (*I say*), Ebe (*he said*), § **272 ;** Dawr (*it matters*), § **273 ;** Dylwn (*I ought*), Rhaid (*must*), §§ **275, 276 ;** Dichon (*it is possible*), § **277 Gram.**

VOCABULARY 19.

NOUNS.

afon (*river*), *f.*
amynedd (*patience*), *f.*
Arglwydd (*Lord*), *m.*
arian (*money*), *m.*
benthyg (*loan*), *m.*
blodau (*flowers*). *m.*
blwyddyn (*year*), *f.*
brawd (*brother*), *m.*
concwest (*conquest, victory*), *f.*
cyfaill (*friend*), *m.*
cyngor (*advice*), *m.*
chwaer (*sister*), *f.*
da (*good*), dim da (*any good*).
dieithrddyn (*stranger*) ; dieith-
    riaid (*strangers*).
dolur (*disease*), *m.*
dwfr (*water*), *m.*
dwyrain (*east*).
dymuniad (*desire*), *m.*
enw (*name*), *m.*
esgeulusdod (*negligence*), *m.*
ffigysbren (*fig-tree*), *m.*
ffordd (*road*), *f.*
gobaith (*hope*), *m.*
golygfa (*scene*), *f.*

gwaith (*work*), *m.*
gwerth (*value*), *m.*
gwir (*truth*), *m.*
gwrhydri (*heroism*), *m.*
Gwynedd (*North Wales*).
Iwerddon (*Ireland*) ; Môr
    Iwerddon (*Irish Sea*).
llais (*voice*), *m.*
llef (*cry*), *f.*
llwythau (*tribes*).
meddiannydd (*owner*), *m.*
meddyg (*physician*), *m.*
Nasareth (*Nazareth*).
pechaduriaid (*sinners*).
pentref (*village*), *m.*
rhodd (*gift*), *f.*
tir (*land, earth*), *m.*
un (*one, any one*), *m.*
ych (*ox*), *m.*
ymchwil (*search*), *m.*
ystenaid (*pitcher*), *f.*

VERBS AND VERB-NOUNS.

â (*he goes*) *Pres.* 3 *s.*
af (*I go*).
adwaenant (*they know*).
adwaenost (*knowest*).

VOCABULARY 19 *(continued)*—

VERBS AND VERB-NOUNS *(continued)*—
adwaenwn *(I used to know)*.
aros *(stay)*, *Imper.* 2 s.
atolwg *(pray)*.
awn *(let us go)*.
bloeddio *(to shout)*.
caffed *(let him have)*.
canfyddid *(it was perceived)*;
    canfyddwn *(I could see)*,
    Sec. Fut. s. 1.
cawn *(we shall have)*.
cloddio *(to dig)*.
clybu *(he heard)*.
cydnabum *(I acknowledged)*.
cyfarfum â *(I met with)*.
cyferfydd *(there shall meet)*.
darfyddwn *(we are finishing)*.
darfydded *(let him perish)*.
darffo *(it shall end)*, 3 s. *Subj.*
deuid *(one would come)*; deuid
    o hyd *(one would come
    across)*.
deuwn *(we are coming)*.
dichon *(possible)*, nid oes
    dichon *(it is not possible)*.
diolchit *(thou wouldst thank)*.
dwyn *(to bear)*.
dychwelais *(I returned)*.
dyfod *(to come)*.
dygwyf *(I may bring)*.
dyry *(he shall give)*.
dywedir *(it is said)*.
ebe *(said he)*.
edwyn *(he knoweth)*.
ei *(thou wilt go)*.
gad *(let it alone)*.
goddef *(to stand, bear)*.

gorfyddai *(were it necessary)*.
gorfyddwn *(let us overtake)*.
gorfod *(must)*; gorfodir fi
    (I am forced).
gwadwn *(I should deny)*.
gwel *(see)*, mi a'th welais *(I
    saw thee)*.
gwerthfawrogid *(it would be
    appreciated)*.
gwisgo *(to wear)*.
gwnaeth *(he made)*.
gwneid *(was made)*.
gwypwyf *(I may know)*.
gŵyr *(he knows)*.
hanai *(he was descended)*.
henffych *(hail)*, *Subj.* 2 s.
hwde *(take)*.
llefais *(I cried)*.
marw *(to die)*.
medd *(says)*.
moes *(give)*.
myned *(to go)*.
mynnech *(thou mayest like)*.
mynychu *(to frequent)*.
oeddit *(thou wast)*.
piau *(he owns)*.
rhaid yw *(there is necessity)*.
rhoddir *(it is given)*.
pe rhoiswn *(had I given)*.
siarad *(to talk)*.
trechu *(to defeat)*.
tyred *(come)*.
ymddwyn *(to act)*.

ADJECTIVES AND ADVERBS.
brenhinol *(royal)*.
canys *(because, for)*.
cyn amled *(as often)*.

VOCABULARY 19 *(continued)*—

ADJECTIVES AND ADVERBS
(continued)—
cyn hir *(soon)*.
diau *(undoubtedly)*.
gynted *(as soon as)*.
hawdd *(easy)*.
hyd oni *(till)*.
hyfryd *(fair)*.

llawer *(many)*.
o hyd *(continually)*.
perffaith *(perfect)*.
rhagor o *(more)*.
yn greulonach *(more severely)*.
yn ol *(ago)*.
y fath *(such)*.
yn sicr *(surely)*.

EXERCISE 32.

(*a*) Translate into English :—

1. Awn a gorfyddwn arnynt, canys rhaid yw i ni drechu'r gelyn. 2. Cyferfydd a chwi ddyn yn dwyn ystenaid o ddwfr. 3. Af at y meddyg fel y gwypwyf fy nolur, canys gwyr ef yn dda beth ydyw. 4. Pwy a ā trosom ni ? A ei di ? Af. 5. Aros yma, atolwg, hyd· oni ddygwyf fy chwaer tros yr afon. 6. Pwy biau'r blodau hyn ? Os tydi, moes i mi un i'w wisgo. Hwde'r un a fynnech. 7. " Cawn floeddio concwest yn y man," medd plant gobaith o hyd. 8. A ddichon dim da ddyfod o Nasareth ? Tyred a gwel. 9. Pe gwneid ymchwil, deuid o hyd i'r llyfr yn sicr. 10. Darfydded y pechaduriaid o'r tir ! 11. Canfyddwn tros Fōr yr Iwerddon lawer golygfa hyfryd. 12. Henffych i enw Arthur, gwnaeth wrhydri tros ei wlad. 13. Pe gorfyddai i mi farw, ni wadwn y gwir. 14. Pa fodd y'm hadwaenost ? Mi a'th welais pan oeddit tan y ffigysbren. 15. Dywedir am ddefaid y dwyrain nad adwaenant lais dieithriaid.

(*b*) Translate into Welsh :—

1. He was descended from one of the royal tribes of North Wales. 2. We are finishing our work soon and then we shall come with you. 3. Let it alone this year, until I shall dig around it. 4. I am forced to act more severely towards him than my desire. 5. Must thou visit the village as frequently now as formerly ? 6. I met your brother on the road last night. 7. The ox knoweth its owner. 8. " I used to know a friend of yours years

ago," said the stranger. 9. I acknowledged his gift, as soon as I returned home. 10. I cried unto the Lord and He heard my cry. 11. Let patience have its perfect work. 12. Who will give the loan of the book ? Had I given it to thee, thou wouldst not have thanked for it. 13. It is easy to talk, but who can stand such negligence ? 14. " It is not possible for me to go," said he, " until more money is given." 15. Had the value of the advice been perceived, it would undoubtedly have been better appreciated.

REVISION TESTS IN WELSH GRAMMAR.

Hitherto the student has been mainly guided in the art of reading and writing the Welsh language. He may now profit by trying a severer test, viz., a test in the theoretical principles involved in the scientific study of the Grammar. The Questions have been selected from the papers set in the Matriculation of the University of Wales for the years 1896–1908, and may be taken as fair examples of what an ordinary student of the Welsh language is expected to know. The questions have been arranged also in the same order as the sections and exercises of the " Reader and Writer," so that the student, if he cares, may test himself in the theory and the practice conjointly.

I. Introductory : Sounds, Symbols and Mutations.

1. Discuss the weak points in the Welsh alphabet. When approximately did the letters *k* and *v* cease to be in common use ? (*Matric. 1896.*)
2. To what extent is Welsh an inflectional language ? (*1905.*)
3. Show the relation between vowel quantity and syllabic accent, noticing in this connexion *nãddo* and *nãge*. (*1897.*)
4. State the rules as to vowel quantity in Welsh and give instances. (*1896.*)
5. Classify the vowel changes commonly occurring in Welsh with instances. (*1897, 1899, 1902.*)
6. Give instances of vowel change in Welsh and distinguish between the usual mutations and reversion. (*1898.*)
7. Name the principal vowel changes which take place in forming the plural of nouns and give examples. (*1901.*)
8. Which are the consonants not liable to mutation in Welsh ? Give instances of the mutations of the other consonants when not occupying the position of initial letters. (*1896.*)
9. Give a table of the mutations of initial consonants, and

notice what is exceptional in the case of *ll* and *rh*. (*1897.*)
10. Mention the principal combinations in which the soft mutation takes place, illustrating by instances. (*1897.*)
11. Give rules for the mutation of initial consonants in the following cases : (*a*) Adjective after noun ; (*b*) noun after positive adjective ; (*c*) noun after a comparative or superlative ; (*d*) noun after *un, dau* or any other cardinal number ; (*e*) noun after ordinal number. (*1898.*)
12. Draw up a table of ordinary mutations of initial consonants, giving an example of each. (*1899.*)
13. Give instances of all the initial mutations of Welsh consonants. (*1900.*)
14. Give, with examples, the rule for mutating the initial consonant of (*a*) a noun governed by a verb when immediately following the verb ; (*b*) a noun governed by a preposition immediately preceding it ; (*c*) an adjective immediately following its noun ; (*d*) a noun immediately preceded by its adjective. (*1901.*)
15. Enumerate the ordinary positions in which initial mutation takes place in a Welsh sentence and give examples. (*1902.*)
16. Which of the Welsh consonants are not mutated ? Pick out the mutations in the following sentence, and explain the principle in each case : " *Bydd i genedl ddeallus bob amser feithrin gwirionedd a chyfiawnder, ond cenedl annoeth a gais lwyddiant trwy drais.*" (*1906.*)
17. Construct a table of mutable consonants. Of what use is mutation in determining gender and case ? (*June, 1907.*)

II. THE ARTICLE.

18. How are the different forms of the article—*yr, 'r*, and *y* used ? Give the Welsh for " *The man's book* " and state the rule as to the definite article in the case of a noun with a genitive depending upon it. (*1898.*)
19. What is the definite article in Welsh, and what modifitions of it are in use ? State the rule as to the initial

mutation after the article and illustrate your answer by giving examples. (*1901.*)

20. State the rules for the use of the article when one noun depends upon another. (*June, 1908.*)

III. THE NOUN.

21. Give the rules for the plural formation of Welsh nouns, with examples. (*1897, 1900.*)

22. Give the plural of *pwnc, ysbytty, pared, mellten, perygl, câr, cefnder, cam, tuedd, gras, nai* and *maen*. (*1903.*)

23. What nouns form their plural by (*a*) an internal change of vowel; (*b*) a change of stem; (*c*) adding *-aint, -ed, -iaid, -od ?* Give the plural of *edau, onnen, cyllell, dynes garedig, dafad dew, llif, dychryn, iau, giewyn,* and *cân.* (*1906.*)

24. Give the corresponding singular or plural of *gwr bonheddig, geneth fach dew, yr eiddo ef, yr anifail hwn, eryr cryf, dôl las lydan ;* and the corresponding masculine or feminine of *dynes landeg, anner goch gorniog, gwydd dew, baedd gwyllt, Sais rhonc,* and *ceffyl melyn.* (*June, 1907.*)

25. Give the plural of *mamaeth, pared, llaw, llwyth, truan, llif, tydi, cennad, bron* and *cwm.* When there is more than one plural distinguish between them. (*June, 1908.*)

26. Mention the vowel indications of gender in Welsh. (*b*) Give the gender of the terminations *-aeth, -deb, d -er, -rwydd.* (*c*) Take the sentence—" *Plentyn mawr yw hi* " and give the gender of plentyn. (*d*) Criticise the statement that the feminine of *gwyn* is *wen.* (*1898.*)

27. Give the general rule as to the gender of monosyllabic nouns in Welsh, and mention the gender of the terminations *-aeth, -deb, -dra, -og, -yn.* (*1900.*)

28. How does Welsh differ from English as regards gender ? Indicate the gender of *aberth, daioni, plentyn, nant, Nadolig, troed, emyn, doethineb,* and *perthynas.* (*1903.*)

29. How far do the terminations of nouns indicate gender ? (*June, 1908.*)

30. Explain, with examples, the use of the genitive case in Welsh. (*June, 1907.*)

IV.   The Adjective.

31. Classify the principal ways of forming the plural of nouns and adjectives. Give instances. (*1898.*)
32. Give a list of the adjectives which distinguish gender and number in Modern Welsh. (*1896, 1900, 1901, 1902.*)
33. Enumerate adjectives which distinguish gender by vowel change and give the gender of terminations -*ydd*, -*ad*, -*an*, -*ni*, -*i*. (*1899.*)
34. Give examples of adjectives which form the feminine from the masculine (*a*) by changing the internal vowel, (*b*) by mutation of the initial consonant. (*Sept., 1907.*)
35. Illustrate the formation of the degrees of comparison of adjectives, and the use of the particles *cyn* and *mor*. (*1898.*)
36. Give the degrees of the comparison of adjectives and state which are considered to be irregular. (*1899.*)
37. How are adjectives compared ? Give the degrees of comparison of *buan, hen, da, ieuanc, hawdd, drwg, mawr, hir, gwerthfawr, llydan, llawer* and *gwlyb*. (*1904.*)
38. Give the degrees of comparison of eight of the irregular adjectives. Show what degree of the adjective has the function of a noun and give examples of this usage. (*June, 1908.*)
39. Give the rules for the use of numerals (cardinal and ordinal) and show where *càn* and *pum* take the place of *cant* and *pump*. (*1897.*)
40. Write out in Welsh the following numbers in full—(*a*) as cardinals, (*b*) as ordinals, (*c*) as numeral adverbs —5, 18, 80, 99, 150, 201, 1,011, and 10,000. (*1905.*)
41. Write down the Welsh cardinal numbers from 1 to 10 and state in all possible cases how they affect the mutable consonants. (*June, 1908.*)

V.   The Pronoun.

42. Give instances of the different kinds of personal pronouns in Welsh, and show how they are used. (*1900.*)
43. Classify the Welsh pronouns, and give the plural of *ti, efe, hithau, tydi, hwn, fy hun*. (*1903. Sept., 1907.*)

44. Show how *fy, 'm, dy, 'th* are used both with nouns and
    verbs, and distinguish between *ef, efe, fe, hwy, hwynthwy*
    and *hwynt*. (*1899.*)
45. What is the exact meaning of demonstrative, reflexive,
    definitive and indefinite as applied to pronouns. Give
    instances. (*1905.*)
46. Explain and illustrate with sentences the use of *neb* and
    dim, pawb and *pob un, pawb* and *pob, rhyw* and *rhai*.
    (*1906, Sept., 1907.*)
47. Which are the relative particles in Welsh and how are
    they used ? (*1896, 1901.*)
48. Distinguish between the meanings of *a* and *yr* and give
    examples. (*1902.*)

VI.   ADVERBS AND CONJUNCTIONS.

49. How do you translate into Welsh the English adverb in
    -ly and the verbal noun in *-ing ?* What is the English
    for "*A c efe yn myned heibio*" and "*Nid yw ond newydd
    ddyfod* "? (*1900.*)
50. Classify Welsh adverbs, showing how they are derived
    and giving examples. (*1904, June, 1907.*)
51. In what different ways are adverbs of time formed in
    Welsh ? Give examples. (*Sept. 1907.*)
52. What is the difference between *oll* and *holl, tipyn* and
    ychydig, aie and *onide ?* Illustrate with sentences
    (*Sept. 1907*).

VII.   THE PREPOSITION.

53. Enumerate the prepositions which take personal ter-
    minations and give the inflections of any three of those
    prepositions at length, indicating at the same time
    of what forms of the verb they remind you. (*1896.*)
54. Conjugate the prepositions *ar, wrth, i ; er, tan ; dros, heb,
    gan ; am, trwy.* (*1899, 1900, 1901, 1902, 1906, Sept.
    1907.*)
55. Analyse the following phrases and give the exact mean-
    ing of each—*odditan, oddifewn, oddiar, o fesur, o
    falchder, cyn bo hir.* (*1903.*)

56. What different relations are expressed by the preposi-
   tions *i*, *o*, *a* (*ag*), and *am* ?   (*1905*.)
57. Explain and illustrate with sentences the use of *yn* and
   mewn.   (*1906*.)
58. What are compound prepositions ?   Give examples and
   show how they affect mutable consonants.   (*June,
   1907*.)

VIII.   THE VERB-NOUN.

59. Illustrate the uses made of the verb-noun in Welsh, show-
   ing among other things that while it helps to complete
   the system of the verb it is not itself a verb.   (*1898*.)
60. Give, with examples, the various uses of the infinitive
   mood in Welsh.   (*Sept. 1907*.)
61. How are English participles represented in Welsh, and
   how are the periphrastic tenses of English rendered in
   Welsh ?   (*1899*.)
62. " The infinitive mood is of very extensive usage in the
   Welsh language."   Illustrate this.   (*1905*.)

IX.   THE VERB.

63. Distinguish between *wyf* and *byddaf* and conjugate both ;
   give also the impersonal forms of each tense.   (*1898*.)
64. Give the 3rd singular of all the tenses of the Welsh verb
   To be, also the impersonal forms corresponding to
   each.   (*1902*.)
65. What are the chief compounds of *Bod ?*   (*1903*.)
66. Distinguish between *sydd, mae, yw* and *oes*.   (*1904*.)
67. Explain and illustrate with sentences the use of *yw* and
   mae.   (*1906*.)
68. Distinguish carefully between the meanings of the verb
   Bod in each of the following sentences,—*Efe yw'r brenin.
   Efe sydd frenin.   Y mae efe'n frenin.   Nid oes yma
   frenin.*   (*June, 1908*.)
69. Give the present and aorist (or preterite) of *af, byddaf,
   clywaf*, without omitting the impersonal forms or
   including periphrastic combinations.   (*1897*.)

70. How many conjugations has the verb in Modern Welsh ?
    Take any regular verb and give the 1st person singular
    of each of its tenses together with the corresponding
    impersonal (passive) forms.   (*1898.*)
71. Give all the forms, personal and impersonal, of the present
    indicative of *wyf* and *gwelaf*, and of the aorist of *af*
    and *clywaf*.   (*1901.*)
72. " The terminations of verbs are changes and contractions
    of personal pronouns." Explain and discuss.   (*June,
    1907.*)
73. Give the present and future of the verbs *wyf, gwn*, and
    adwaen.   (*1896.*)
74. Give in full the tenses to which *gwyr* and *gwyddwn* belong,
    together with their impersonal forms.   (*1899.*)
75. Write down the passive voice inflections of *caru*.   Explain
    the use of the passive voice in Welsh.   (*1905.*)
76. Distinguish between *gallu* and *medru, gwybod* and *adnabod,
    yr wyf yn cael*, and *y mae gennyf*.   (*June, 1907.*)
77. Conjugate the verb *credaf* in all the tenses of the indica-
    tive and subjunctive moods.   Give all its passive
    forms.   (*July, 1908.*)
78. Give in full the aorist indicative, the present and imper-
    fect Subjunctive of *bwrw, myned, ffoi, colli*.   (*Sept.
    1907.*)
79. Give in full the tenses to which *daw* and *daeth* belong,
    together with the impersonal forms.   (*1900.*)
80. Give in full the present indicative and present subjunctive
    of *troi, cael, myned, bod, dyfod, gwybod, adnabod*.   (*1903,
    1904.*)
81. Analyse the following words and give the exact meaning
    of each—*ymolchi, ymweled, ymladd, ymddwyn*.   (*1903.*)
82. Explain with illustrations the meaning and use of—
    dichon, piau, tybed, atolwg.   (*1904.*)

X. SYNTAX.

83. State, with examples, the principal rules as to the syntax
    of the verb in simple and compound sentences.   (*1897.*)
84. Mention what you regard as the chief differences of syntax
    between Welsh and English.   (*1898.*)

85. Explain the rule as to the verb and its subject, and give examples showing how the agreement between a verb and its subject is not a feature of Welsh syntax. (*1899*.)
86. Which is the nominative to the verb in the sentences,—*Efe yw Dafydd, Tydi yw'r gwr, Pwy yw y dynion ?* What is the rule as to verbs and their nominatives in Welsh ? (*1900*.)
87. Explain some of the chief peculiarities of Welsh syntax. (*1901*.)
88. Explain the case relations of the following words and translate them into English :—*Gwrthyd gynorthwyo neb. Myned iddo. Iddo fyned. Myned o hono.* (*1902*.)
89. In English a verb agrees with its nominative in number. Contrast the syntax of Welsh sentences. (*1902*.)
90. Note the peculiarities of Welsh as to the agreement in a sentence of (*a*) verb and subject, (*b*) adjective and noun. (*Sept. 1907*.)
91. How does Welsh differ from other languages in (*a*) the use of the verb-noun, (*b*) the agreement of a verb with its subject, (*c*) the agreement of a relative pronoun with its antecedent ? (*1904*.)
92. Render into Welsh in the form of a reported Speech (*oratio obliqua*) : " The two books which I have found are well worth reading, but neither of them belongs to him. To whom do they belong ? One is mine and the other is yours." (*1906*.)
93. Turn into Welsh in the form of reported speech : " We had not advanced a hundred steps, when we heard a strange noise in the grass behind us. I turned and saw my brother raise his gun, and wait calmly for the unknown enemy, which after all proved to be our own dog. In our hurry we had forgotten him and he had been sent after us." (*June, 1907*.)

XI. MEANING AND DERIVATION OF WORDS.

94. Give the etymology of the following words—*ateb, cynnal, cytûn, dyffryn, dyna, drycin, ebol, hunllef, llynges, meddianol, melfoch, tylwyth, ysgyfarnog.* (*1896*.)

95. Distinguish between *mae, mai,* and *mau* ; *draen* and *drain* ;
   poblog and *poblogaidd* ; *llwythau* and *llwythi* ; *dysgu*
   and *dysgi* ; *cynghorion* and *cynghorau.* (*1903.*)
96. Give the meaning and derivation of—*doeth, pader, caeth,
   torf, trannoeth, urdd, arf, arian, saeth, parth, canghell,
   pregeth.* (*1904.*)
97. Distinguish between *dirwyo* and *dirywio, llyw* and *lliw,
   hīn, hun,* and *hŷn* ; *mewn* and *yn* ; *os* and *pe.* (*1905.*)
98. Give the derivation and meaning of,—*arch, eglwys, calch,
   gofal, llog, urdd, angel, efengyl, cyff, swllt, tafarn, torf.*
   (*1906.*)
99. Correct the orthography of the following words where
   necessary, giving your reason in each case—*cynghor,
   cydmarol, ychain, cynheuaf, ysgrifenwyd, lluosog, dysglair,
   cymmaint, cyddio, cynganheddol.* (*July, 1908.*)
100. Give the Welsh for—the previous day ; the day after ;
   yesterday ; to-morrow ; the day after to-morrow and
   the following day ; the day before yesterday ; at
   dawn ; the next fortnight ; to-morrow evening.
   (*1906.*)

PARSING CHARTS WITH EXAMPLES AND EXERCISES.

I. Nouns.

Kind of Noun.	Gender.	Number.	Case.
Concrete { Proper · · · { Common Abstract Verb-noun	Masculine Feminine Common	Singular Plural	Nominative Accusative Genitive

(*a*) Ordinary Examples parsed :—
1. Meddai'r *Cymry ddewrder* digonol i *beidio ildio* i *filwyr Rhufain* ar *unwaith*.

Cymry	Noun, proper, masc. plur. nominative, subject to verb ' meddai.'
	In sentences of Normal order the subject follows the verb and the accus. the subject.
ddewrder	Noun, abstract. masc. sing. accusative, governed by verb ' meddai.'
	Abstract nouns must be masc. or fem. No noun is neuter in Welsh.
beidio	Verb-noun (masc. sing.) accus. governed by prepos. ' i.'
	Verb-nouns are always masc. and sing. and never govern the accus.
ildio	Verb-noun (masc. sing.) genitive dependent on ' beidio.'
filwyr	Noun, common, masc. plur. accus. governed by prepos. ' i.'
Rhufain	Noun, proper, fem. sing. genitive, dependent on ' filwyr.'
unwaith	Noun, common, fem. sing. accus., governed by prepos. ' ar.'

(*b*) Special Examples parsed :—

2. Rhifai'r *cyfoethogion bump*.

cyfoethogion | Adj. used as a Noun, masc. plur. nomin., subject to verb ' rhifai.'

bump | Numeral used as a Noun, masc. plur. accus., governed by verb ' rhifai.'

See § 309 b Gram.

Plurals like ' cyfoethogion ' are often common gender.

3. Gwelais *eryr benyw* yn y filodfa.

eryr | Noun, common, masc. sing. accus., governed by ' gwelais.'

The subject is often implied in the verbal ending as in ' gwelais.'

benyw | Adj. qualifying eryr.   **See § 310 c Gram.**

> *Note.*—The Grammatical gender of the word ' eryr ' is masc., as the non-mutation of the initial consonant of the adj. ' benyw ' proves, although the expression ' eryr benyw ' refers to a female bird.   **See §§ 104, 106, Obs. 2 : 112, 3 Gram.**

4. Cerddodd *filltir*.

filltir | Noun, common, fem. sing. Adverbial accus. of distance.   **See § 385 Gram.**

5. Canwn y *gân* drosodd eto.

gân | Noun, common, fem. sing. cognate accus.   **See § 326, 2 Gram.**

6. Y mae'r ddynes yn drwm ei *chlyw*.

chlyw | Noun, common, masc. sing. accus. of nearer definition.   **See § 387 Gram.**

7. Gochel Alecsander, y *gôf copr*.

gôf | Noun, common, masc. sing. accus. in apposition with ' Alecsander.'

copr | Noun, common, masc. sing. genit. of material.   **See § 377 Gram.**

8. O *Arglwydd !* clyw fy llef.
   Gwna'm ffydd yn gadarn, gref.
   I fentro *angeu loes* :

Arglwydd	Noun, proper, masc. sing. nom. of address.
angeu	Noun, common, masc. sing. genit. dependent on 'loes.' **See § 383 Gram.**
loes	Noun, common, masc. sing. genit. dependent on ' fentro.'

9. Y mae'r bachgen yn *ysgolor* gwych.

ysgolor	Noun, common, masc. sing. nomin. predicate noun with 'mae.' **See § 324 Gram. on Predicate noun.**

II. ADJECTIVES.

Kind of Adjective.	Gender.	Number.	Degree.	Use.
Descriptive . . Numerals { Cardinal / Ordinal Demonstrative § 148 The Article § 145 Possessive § 141 Interrogative § 158	{ Masculine / Feminine	Singular / Plural }	Positive Comparative of Equality Comparative Proper Superlative	Attributive Predicative

(*a*) Ordinary Examples parsed :—

1. " *Pa* obaith sydd am feibion *glewion* a genethod *coethedig* tra y telir *leied* sylw *i'r iaith* Gymraeg yn *ein* hysgolion *elfennol y* dyddiau *hyn* ? Bydd *y* Cymry'n *debycach* o ymrestru gyda'*r* cenhedloedd *blaenaf* pan bwysleisiont *eu dwy* ragoriaeth *bennaf,* sef *eu* hiaith *a'u* crefydd."

Pa	Adj. interrogative, qualifying the noun ' obaith,' attributive use. **See § 102 Gram.**
glewion	Adj. descriptive, masc. plur. positive, qualifying ' feibion,' attrib. use. **See § 310 a Gram.**

coethedig	Adj. verbal, positive, qualifying ' genethod,' attrib. use. **See § 310 a Gram.**
leied	Adj. descriptive, comp. of equality, qual. ' sylw,' attrib. use.
'r	Definite Article, pointing out the noun ' iaith.'
ein	Adj. possessive, common, plur. qualifying ' hysgolion.'
	A Poss. adj. agrees in gender with the noun to which it refers. **See § 144 Gram.**
elfennol	Adj. descriptive, positive, qualifying ' hysgolion,' attrib. use.
y	Definite Article, pointing out the noun ' dyddiau.'
hyn	Adj. Demonstrative, qualifying ' dyddiau.'
y	Def. Art. pointing out the noun ' Cymry.'
yn debycach	Adj. descriptive, comparative proper, qual. ' Cymry,' predicative use.
'r	Def. Art. pointing out the noun ' cenhedloedd.'
blaenaf	Numeral, Ordinal, qualifying ' cenhedloedd.'
eu	Adj. possessive, common, plur. qualifying ' ragoriaeth.'
dwy	Numeral, Cardinal. fem. qualifying ' ragoriaeth.' **See § 336 Gram.**
bennaf	Adj. descriptive, superlative, qualifying ' ragoriaeth.'
eu and 'u	Adj. possessive, common, plur. qualifying ' hiaith ' and ' crefydd.'

(*b*) Special Examples parsed :—

2. Ym mysg y *tri* dyn *ar ddeg* hynny yr oedd *deg* o ddeillion.

tri	Numeral qualifying ' dyn.' **See § 123 Gram.**
ar	Prep. gov. ' dyn.' understood.
ddeg	Numeral qualifying ' dyn ' understood.
deg	Numeral used as a noun, masc. plur. nomin. to verb ' oedd.'
	When prep.*o* separates the numeral from the noun the former is to be parsed as a noun.

3. Mae'r afon yn *ddofn* gerllaw'*n* tŷ ni.

ddofn	Adj. descriptive, fem. sing. positive, qual. ' afon,' predicative use. **See § 325 and § 103 Gram.**
'n	Adj. possessive, postvocalic, common plur. 1st person, qual. ' tŷ.' **See § 141 Gram.**

4. O *bob* gwrthrych *canfyddadwy y* wal *gerrig* dynnodd ei sylw fwyaf.

bob	Definite pronominal adj. qualifying ' gwrthrych.' **See § 589 Gram.**
canfyddadwy	Adj. verbal, positive, qual. ' gwrthrych.' **See § 559 Gram.**
gerrig	Noun used as an Adj. qual. ' wal,' attributive Genitive. **See §§ 310 c, 338 Gram.**

5. Pe meddai'r *oll* o honom heddyw yr *holl* fyd ni'n digonid yn fwy na'r dynion *gynt*.

oll	Noun, numeral, common, sing. nomin. to verb ' meddai.'
holl	Adj. numeral, qualifying ' fyd.' **See § 589 Gram.**
gynt	Adverb used as an adj. qualifying ' dynion.' **See § 310 Gram.**

III. PRONOUNS.

Kind of Pronoun.		Gender.	Number.	Person.	Case.
Personal	Postvocalic Simple Emphatic Conjunctive	Masculine Feminine Common	Singular Plural	1st 2nd 3rd	Accusative. Nom. Ac- cus. Genit.
Possessive . . . . . Demonstrative . . . . Interrogative . . . . Indefinite . . . . . Relative		Usually agreeing with its antecedent in gender, number, and person, but not in case.			

(*a*) Ordinary Examples parsed :—

    1. Os *tydi* a gei bleser a *minnau* boen mewn anhawsterau

croesawn *hwynt* yn ddiofn, canys o'*u* derbyn felly y daw
i *ni* ddaioni.

tydi	Pron. personal, emphatic, common, sing. 2nd nomin. to verb ' gei.'
minnau	Pron. pers. conjunctive, common, sing. 1st nomin. to verb ' gaf ' understood.
hwynt	Pron. pers. simple, common, plur. 3rd accus. governed by verb ' croesawn.'
'u	Poss. Adj. postvocalic, common, plur. 3rd.
ni	Pron. pers. simple, common, plur. 1st accus. governed by prep. ' i.'

2. *Yr eiddoch chwi* fydd y llyfr hwn *y* canmola *rhywrai*
lawer arno, os dywedwch *pwy* yw ei awdwr.

yr eiddoch	Pron. possessive, common, plur. form with sing. application. 2nd person.
chwi	Pron. pers. simple, common, plur. 2nd pers. Genit. Supplementary to eiddoch.
y	Pron. relative, masc. sing. 3rd in agreement with antec. ' llyfr.' Adv. accus. Parse relative *y* always as Adverbial Accus. **See §§ 168, 570 Gram.**
rhywrai	Pron. indef. common, plur. 3rd nomin. to verb ' canmola.'
pwy	Pron. interrogative, common, sing. 3rd Predicate pronoun with verb ' yw.'

(*b*) Special Examples passed :—

3. *Fe'n* carodd *ni* cyn ein bod, carwn ninnau'*n*
gilydd.

Fe	Formal pers. pron. **See § 133 Gram.**
'n	Pron. pers. post-voc. common, plur. 1st accus. governed by ' carodd.' To distinguish the postvocalics, note that the pron. always precedes a verb and is accus., whereas the adj. always precedes a noun and qualifies it.
ni	Pron. pers. simple, common, plur. 1st accus. in apposition with ' 'n.' **See § 136 Gram.**
ein gilydd	Pron. reciprocal, common, plur. 1st accus. governed by ' carwn.' **See § 157 Gram.**

4. Llyfr *pwy* yw *hwn* ?   Llyfr y *sawl a'i* ceisio gyntaf.

pwy	Pron. interrogative, common, sing. 3rd genitive. **See § 159 Gram.**
hwn	Pron. demonstrative, masc. sing. 3rd nomin. subject to ' yw.'
sawl	Pron. indefinite, common, sing. 3rd Genitive.
a	Pron. relative, common, sing. 3rd (antec. ' sawl ') nomin. to verb ' ceisio.'
'i	Pron. pers. postvoc. masc. sing. accus. governed by ' ceisio.'

5. A'r ddau *a* giliodd i'*w* tai *eu hunain*, pan welsant y *naill y llall*.

a	Pron. relative, common, plur. 3rd (antec. ddau), nomin. to ' giliodd.'
'w	Adj. Possessive, postvoc., common, plur. 3rd qualifying ' tai.'
eu	Adj. Possessive common, plur. 3rd qualifying ' hunain.' **See § 139 Gram.**
hunain	Noun, common, plur. 3rd, genitive., **See § 139 Gram.**
naill	Pron. indefinite, common, sing. 3rd nomin. to ' welsant ' in apposition to subject pron. implied in ' welsant.' **See § 156 Gram.**
llall	Pron. indefinite, common, sing. 3rd accus. governed by ' welsant.'

IV. ADVERBS.

Kind of Adverb.		Degree.	Use.
Simple or Compound denoting	Time Place Manner Degree Number Affirmation Negation, &c.	Positive Comp. of Equality Comp. Proper Superlative	To modify a verb, adj., adv., prepos., conj. or a clause. Some adverbs are Conjunctive, others are Interrogative.

(*a*) Ordinary Examples parsed :—

1. Dywed i mi *paham* y gweithiaist *mor dra egniol heddyw* ?

paham	Adv. interrogative, modifying the verb 'gweithiaist.'
mor	Adv. of extent, modifying 'egniol.' **See** § **118 Gram.**
dra	Adv. of degree, modifying 'egniol.'
egniol	Adv. of manner, modifying 'gweithiaist, comp. of equality. Adverbs of manner only have degrees of comparison.
heddyw	Adv. of time, modifying 'gweithiaist.'

2. *Ai* dy dad a alwodd *yma ddwywaith ymhell* cyn brecwast ? *Ie.*

ai	Interrogative Adv. used in introducing a question. **See** § **283 Gram.**
yma	Adv. of place modifying the verb 'alwodd.'
ddwywaith	Numeral Adv. modifying 'alwodd.' **See** § **129 Gram.**
ymhell	Adv. of extent modifying the preposition 'cyn '(=yn + pell).
ie	Adv. of affirmation. **See** § **286 Gram.**

3. *Hwyrach yr* af *yn awr. Nid* yw yn gwlawio, ac argoela ddod *yn braf o'r diwedd*.

hwyrach	Adv. of doubt modifying the verb 'af.'
yr	Introductory Adv. or pre-verbal particle. *A, y* and *yr* before verbs, especially the verb Bod, have so lost their force as Relatives as to be regarded as mere pre-verbal particles in Mod. Welsh. **See** §§ **168, 570 and Appendix, p. 178 Gram.**
yn awr	Phrase Adv. modifying the verb 'af.' **See** § **598 Gram.**
nid	Adv. of negation, modifying the verb 'yw.'
yn braf	Adverbial 'yn ' with the Adj. 'braf ' makes an Adv. of manner modifying the verb-noun 'ddyfod,' positive degree. **See** § **324, 4.**
o'r diwedd	Adv. Phrase of time modifying 'ddyfod.'

4. " *Y* mae dau *yn well nag un*," medd hen ddiareb. *Os felly, goreu po amlaf* y cofir hyn gan wŷr trahaus.

y	Introductory Adv. (or pre-verbal particle).
yn well	Adverbial ' yn ' with adj. ' well,' making an adv. of manner modifying ' mae.' Comparative proper.
nag	Adverb used in comparison, modifying ' yw ' understood.
os	Adv. of condition modifying ' felly.'
felly	Adv. of manner modifying the whole clause. **See § 315-6 Gram.**
goreu	Adv. of degree, superlative. Cp. the English " The more the merrier."
po	Adv. of comparison modifying ' amlaf.' **See § 346 h Gram.**
amlaf	Adv. of degree or number modifying ' cofir.' superlative.
y	Pre-verbal particle.

V. CONJUNCTIONS.

Kind of Conjunction.	Function.
Co-ordinative, § 314 Gram.	Joining words, phrases or the clauses of a *Compound* sentence to denote the addition, choice, contrast or inference of thoughts.
Sub-ordinative, § 315 Gram.	Joining the subordinate clause to the principal in a *complex* sentence and defining its dependence as being that of time, purpose, condition, concession, comparison or consequence.

(*a*) Ordinary Examples parsed :—

1. Rhoddwyd yr arian *a'r* papurau i'r tad *neu i'r*, fam, *ond* gofalwyd na chafodd y plant afael arnynt, *felly* diogelwyd yr eiddo.

> a   Conj. co-ordinative, of copulative or cumulative force, joining ' arian ' and ' papurau.'

H

neu | Conj. co-ordinating, of alternative force, join-
ing ' tad ' and ' fam.'

ond | Conj. co-ordinating, of adversative force,
joining " Rhoddwyd yr arian " . . . and
" gofalwyd na chafodd."

felly | Conj. co-ordinating, joining " Rhoddwyd
. . . diogelwyd . . ."

2. Aeth adref *pan* orffennodd.

pan | Conjunctive Adv. of time, subordinating
' orffennodd ' to ' aeth adref.'

(*b*) Special Examples parsed :—

Note particularly the Conjunctive Adverbs given in
§ **346 Gram.** and then examine the instances given to
illustrate Temporal, Local, etc., clauses in §§ **347 a–360
Gram.**

3. *Lle* bo dolur y bydd llaw.   (*Lle*=Conjunctive
Adv. Local force, subord.)

4. Af allan *gan* nad yw yn gwlawio. (*Gan*=Conj.
Adv. causal force, subord.)

5. Gweddiwch *fel* nad eloch i brofedigaeth. (*Fel*=
Conj. Adv. purpose, subord.)

6. Arhosodd *nes* y blinodd.   (*Nes*=Conj. Adv. of
consequence, subord.)

7. *Pe* delai, llawenychem.   (*Pe*=Conj. Adv. condition
subord.)

8. *Er* na chlywais yn uniongyrchol eto credaf. (*Er*=
Conj. Adv. concession, subord.)

9. Nid yw ei iechyd cystal *ag* y bu.   (*Ag*=Conj. Adv,
of comparison, subord.)

10. Gwelsom y dyn *pan* fu yno.   (*Pan*=Conj. Temporal,
subord.) **See § 368 Gram.**

11. Dywedodd *mai* fi biau'r wobr.   (*Mai*=Conj. affirma-
tive, subord.) **See § 315.**

12. Gwn *y* bydd yn fachgen ufudd.   (*Y*=Conj. affirm.
subord.) **See § 315 Gram.**

13. Dywedais *nad* awn yno mwyach.   (*Nad*=Conj.
negative, subord.) **See § 315.**

VI. PREPOSITIONS.

Kind of Preposition.	Use.
Simple { with pronominal suffixes / without pronominal suffixes Compound { with pronominal suffixes / without pronominal suffixes Prepositional Phrases	Give the gender, number and person of the conjugated pre positions. Prepos. govern a noun, pronoun and verb-noun in the accus. case. Genitive follows the noun ele ment in a compound preposi tion.

(*a*) Ordinary Examples parsed :—
  I. *Cyn* gwybod *ohonof* safwn *gerllaw* 'r tŷ.

cyn	Prepos. simple, governing the verb-noun ' gwybod ' in accus. case.
ohonof	Compound prepos. common, sing. Ist person suffix.
ger llaw	Prepositional phrase (*ger*=simple prepos. governing the noun ' llaw,' therefore ' tŷ ' is genitive). **See §§ 298–404 Gram.**

(*b*) Special Examples parsed :—
  Special attention should be given to the parsing of prepositions compounded with pronominal suffixes. **See §§ 292–296 Gram.** The list of Prepositional expres sions given in §§ **388–444** should also be carefully read.
  2. Yr oeddent *wedi* bod *yn* canu *ar hyd* y nos.

wedi	Simple Prepos. governing the verb-noun ' bod ' in accus. case.
yn	Simple Prepos. governing the verb-noun ' canu ' in accus. case.
ar	Simple Prepos. governing ' hyd.'
hyd	Noun, common masc. sing. accus. governed by prepos. ' ar.'
nos	Noun, common, fem. sing. genitive. Each element in Compound tenses and preposi tional phrases is to be parsed separately.

3. Y mae *gennyf finnau* gwyn *yn* dy *erbyn* di.

gennyf	Simple Prepos. compounded with suffix 1st pers. sing. common.
finnau	Pron. conjunctive, common, sing. 1st accus. in apposition with pronominal element of ' gennyf,'
yn erbyn	Elements of compound prepos., ' yn ' governing the noun ' erbyn ' and the pron. ' di' in genit. **See §§ 435-6 Gram.**

4. Aeth *i'w* dŷ *er ys* oriau.

i	Simple prepos. governing ' dŷ ' in the accus. case. **See § 142 Gram.**
er ys	Prepositional phrase governing ' oriau ' in accus. case. **See § 414 Gram.** ' Er ys ' meant originally ' since it is.'

5. Yr wyf *yn* galw *yng* Nghaerdydd *yn* fynych, canys y mae 'r tren *yn* gyfleus.

yn	Prepos. governing the verb-noun ' galw ' in the accus. case.
yng	Prepos. governing ' Nghaerdydd ' in the accus. case.
yn	Adverbial ' yn' followed by adj. ' fynych,' making an Adv. of time modifying the verb ' galw.'
yn	Predicative ' yn,' 'ollowed by the adj. ' gyfleus,' used in the predicative position.

> To distinguish these four uses of ' yn,' note that the verb-noun governed by ' yn ' as prepos. retains its radical initial consonant, but that ' yn ' governs the nasal mutation of nouns and the soft mutation of an adjective in the predicative or adverbial position.

VII. VERBS.

Kind of Verb.	Conjugation or Voice.	Mood.	Tense.	Number and Person.	Agreement.
Regular or Irregular Transitive or Intransitive (Auxiliary)	Personal or (Active Voice) Impersonal or (Passive Voice)	Indicative Imperative Subjunctive	Present (and Future) Past Imperf. Aorist Pluperfect.	Sing. or Plural. 1st 2nd 3rd	Subject of personal verb is to be mentioned, and the agreement of the verb with it wherever such is the case.

(*a*) Ordinary Examples parsed :—

1. *Ysgrifenaf* lythyr fel y *gwelo*'m cyfaill mai myfi *sy'n* iawn.

ysgrifenaf	Verb, regular, transitive, personal, indicative present, sing. 1st agreeing with the pronoun ' fi ' implied in the verbal suffix.
	Verbs conjugated like ' dysgaf, trof, cryfhaf ' are Regular (§§ 209 a–224 b Gram.), the rest Irregular (§§ 242–277 Gram.). Transitive and Intransitive are explained on p. 82 Gram. For subjects implied in the verbal endings see § 316 Gram.
gwelo	Verb, regular, trans. pers. subj. pres. sing. 3rd agreeing with the noun ' cyfaill.'
sy	Verb, irreg. intrans. pers. indic. pres. sing. 3rd.
	The verb Bod (§§ 195 a, b), is an Irregular verb.

2. *Gwnewch frysio* neu *fe'ch delir* gan y gwlaw.

gwnewch	Verb, irreg. trans. pers. imperative, pres. plur. 2nd agreeing with subject implied in verb-ending.
frysio	Verb-noun, accus. governed by ' gwnewch.'
fe	Formal pers. pronoun.

| 'ch | Postvoc. pers. pron. common, plur. 2nd accus. governed by ' delir.' **See §§ 178-226 a Gram.** |
| delir | Verb, reg. intrans. impersonal, indic. pres. **See § 209 b Gram.** |

3. *Cafodd ei weled* yn *ymegnio* am *ddianc*.

cafodd	Verb, reg. trans. pers. indic. aorist, sing. 3rd agreeing with the subject implied in the verb-ending.
ei	Poss. Adj. indicating the subject of the verb-noun ' weled.' **See § 241 Gram.**
weled	Verb-noun, accus. governed by ' cafodd.' **See § 280 Gram.**
ymegnio	Verb-noun, accus. governed by prepos. ' yn.' The ym as a prefix to verbs is a prep. not a pron. Do not parse as Middle Voice. **See § 463 Gram.**
ddianc	Verb-noun, accus. governed by prepos. 'am.'

(*b*) Special Examples parsed :—

Special attention should be given to the parsing of anomalous and defective verbs. **See §§ 242-277 Gram.** Care should also be taken to distinguish the Subject from the Complement in connexion with the verb ' Bod,' especially with *mae, yw, oes,* and *sydd.* **See §§ 324, 484-490 Gram.**

4. Gad ef hyd oni *ddarffwyf* gloddio o'i amgylch.

| ddarffwyf | Verb, irreg. trans. pers. subj. pres. sing. 1st the subject being implied in the verb-ending. **See § 251 Gram.** |

5. *Henffych* well ! brenin yr Iuddewon.

| henffych | Verb, irreg. intrans. pers. subj. pres. sing. 2nd. **See § 249 Gram.** |

6. Os *gŵyr, dyweded*.

| gwyr | Verb. irreg. intrans. pers. indic. pres. sing. 3rd, the subject being implied in verb-ending. **See § 257 Gram.** |
| dyweded | Verb, reg. intrans. pers. imper. pres. sing. 3rd. |

7. *Atolwg*, Arglwydd ! clyw.

atolwg	Verb irreg. trans. pers. imper. pres. sing. 2nd. **See § 245 Gram.**

8. " Pwy," *ebe* ef, " *biau'r* llyfr hwn " ?

ebe	Verb, irreg. trans. pers. indic. past imperf. sing. 3rd agreeing with subject ' ef.' **See § 272 Gram.**
biau	Verb, irreg. trans. impers. indic. pres. sing. 3rd agreeing with subject ' pwy.' **See § 270 Gram.**

VIII. THE SAME OR SIMILAR WORDS USED AS DIFFERENT PARTS OF SPEECH.

Word.	Part of Speech.	Meaning.	Example.
a	Conjunction	and	Prynnodd geffyl a chert yn y ffair.
â	Preposition	with	Torrodd ei fys â chyllell. § 405 Gram.
â	Verb (see *af.* § 260)	will go	Pwy a â trosom ni ?
a	Relative pronoun	who, which	Dyma'r llyfrau a brynnais.
a	Noun	Letter A	' A ' yw llythyren gynta'r wyddor.
a	Interrogative particle	Not translated	A yw'th dad gartref ? § 370 *a* Gram.
ac	Conjunction	and	Pryn y gwir ac na werth
aer	Noun	heir, battle	Efe yw aer yr ystad.
air	Noun(mutated)	word	Credwch ei air. [(mutated).
aur	Noun	gold	Aur ac arian nid oes gennyf
ag	Preposition	with	Ni phrynni gymeriad ag aur ac arian. § 329 *a* Gram.
ag	Relative pron.	as	Y cyfryw ag oeddent cefais hwy'n rhad. § 572 Gram.
ag	Conjunctive pron. after comparatives of equality	as	Nid yw cyn gyfoethoced ag y bu. § 359 *a* Gram.
ai	Interrogative particle	Not translated	Ai ci yw dy was ? § 370 *a* Gram.
ai	Conjunctive	or, either	Deuwch naill ai heno neu nos yfory. § 314 Gram.
ai (ae)	Verb. § 260 Gram.	he was wont to go	Ai ar ei union i wneud cymwynas.

Word.	Part of Speech.	Meaning.	Example.
a'i . .	Conj. and poss. adj.	and his or and her	Y mae Arthur a'i filwyr yn cysgu.
â'i . .	Prep. and poss. adj.	with his or her	Gweithiodd â'i llaw yn ddiwyd.
a'u . .	Conj. and poss. adj.	and their	Hoffaf y bobl a'u harferion.
â'u . .	Prep. and poss. adj.	with their	Daeth y plant a'u llyfrau o'r ysgol.
am . .	Preposition	around, for	Yr oeddwn am y pared a'm gelyn. § 406 Gram. Gofelais am iddo fynd yn bryd-. lon. § 368 *a* Gram.
a'm. .	Conj. and poss. adj.	and my	Rhowch fy enw i a'm tad i lawr.
â'm. .	Prep. and poss. adj.	with my	Ysgrifennais y llythyr a'm llaw fy hun.
am . .	Conjunctive adv.	because	A ydych yn ddig am nad aeth y llane ? § 349 *b* Gram.
	Conjunctive adv.	if only	Fe fydd yn dawel am y caiff ddigon o arian. § 355, 3 Gram.
a'n . .	Conj. and poss. adj.	and our	Efe yw'n hathraw a'n cyfaill goreu.
â'n . .	Prep. and poss. adj.	with our	Gwnaeth gam â'n heiddo.
ā'n . .	Verb and poss. adj.	our . . will go	Nid ā'n gwaith yn ofer. § 260 Gram.
Cp. a'th, a'ch	Prep. and poss. adj.	with thy, your	
anwyd .	Noun	{ passion { a cold	Gochel ddrwg anwydau. Cymerwch hwn at yr anwyd.
ar . .	Preposition	upon	{ Tyf y grug ar y mynydd. { Gwerthais y deg llyfr ar hugain.
âr . .	Noun	ploughed land	Ni chaed nac âr na medi y flwyddyn honno.
ar . .	Relative pron.	that	Holai pawb ar a welais am danat. § 571 Gram.
a'r . .	Conj. and def. article	and the	{ Prynnais y tŷ a'r dodrefn. { A'r dynion yn cysgu, diengais o'r { tŷ.
â'r . .	Prep. and def. article	with the	Wedi lladd llawer â'r cleddyf, diangasant.
ā'r . .	Verb and def. article	go the	Yno yr ā'r llongau.

THE SAME OR SIMILAR WORDS USED AS DIFFERENT PARTS
OF SPEECH (*continued*)—

Word.	Part of Speech.	Meaning.	Example.
arch .	Noun	ark	A glywaist ti am Arch Noah ?
arch .	Verb	command	Arch i'r cerrig hyn fod yn fara.
Bach .	Noun : Adj.	hook ; small	Daliodd bysgodyn bach â bach.
bai . .	Verb (§ 195*a*): Noun	it were ; fault	Pe bai arnat y bai hwn ni'th hoffwn.
bron .	Adverb	almost	Y mae bron yn bryd cinio.
bron	Noun	breast	Ai sugno bron y mae'r baban ?
budd .	Noun	profit	Nid oes budd ar wneuthur llyfrau lawer
bydd .	Verb (§ 195 *a*)	will be	Bydd canu yn y nefoedd.
cau, cae	Verb-noun ; Noun	shut ; field	Yr wyf wedi cau y defaid yn y cae.
cān, cae	Noun ; adj. ; numeral	song ; white ; 100	⎰ Ai cān newydd yw hon ? ⎱ Hoffaf fara càn. Y mae càn mlynedd oddiar hynny.
canu, cannu	Verb-noun : verb-noun	to sing ; to bleach	⎰ Dewch i glywed y canu. Yr oedd ei wisgoedd wedi eu cannu fel eira.
car . .	Verb (Imper. S. 2) ; noun	love ; friend	⎰ Car dy gymydog. ⎱ Car a chyfaill nid oedd ganddo.
cànt, cānt	Numeral ; verb	100 ; they shall have; sang	⎧ Yr oedd cànt namyn un o'r praidd mewn hedd. Cānt bardwn, os dychwelant. § 263 Gram. ⎩ Tudur Aled a'i cant (= canodd § 208 Remark *b*).
Cymry ;	Noun	Welshmen;	Gelwir y trigolion yr ' Gymry ' a'u
Cymru	,,	Wales	gwlad yn ' Gymru.'
chwaeth	Noun	taste	Meithrinodd chwaeth dda.
chwaith	Adverb	⎰ neither much less	Nid wyf finnau'n cofio chwaith.
dof, dof	Verb ; adj.	I will come ; tame	Dof a'r aderyn dof i chwi yfory.
di, du	Pronoun ; adj.	thou ; black	⎱
dy, dŷ	Poss. adj. : Noun	thine : house	⎰ Ai hwn yw dy hen dŷ du di ?
er . .	Preposition	for the sake of	Gwnaeth hyn er mantais i mi. § 416 Gram.
er . .	Conjunctive adverb	although	Er nad oedd efe gartref, cefais groeso mawr. § 358 *a* Gram.
fe . .	Formal pers. pron.	Not translated	Fe welodd y dyn bethau rhyfedd. § 133 Gram.

Word.	Part of Speech.	Meaning.	Example.
'fe . .	Colloq. form of efe	he	'Fe wnaeth y drwg.
gwŷr .	Noun, plur. of gwr	men	Gwŷr o nerth oedd milwyr Arthur.
gŵyr .	Adj. used as noun	crooked	Y gŵyr a wneir yn uniawn.
gŵyr .	Verb, 3 s. pres. indic.	he knows	Gŵyr yn dda fy meddwl.
gwir .	Noun and adj.	truth, true	Dywed y gwir bob amser. Ai ystori wir yw hon ?
gwaith.	Noun (masc.)	work	Gwnaeth lawer o waith tros ei feistr.
gwaith.	Noun (fem.)	time	Gwelais ar unwaith fod teir-gwaith yn ddigon iddo. § 129 Gram.
gwaeth	Adverb	worse	Yr oedd yr ail yn waeth na'r cyntaf.
holl .	Adjective	all	Ceisiodd Alecsander orchfygu'r holl fyd.
oll . .	Noun	the whole	Ond yr oll a gafodd oedd daear ei fedd.
hael .	Adjective	generous	Hael yw Hywel ar bwrs y wlad.
haul .	Noun	sun	Ei enw a bery tra fo haul.
hwy .	Pronoun	they	Gwelsant hwy y lle o'm blaen. § 132 Gram.
hwy .	Adj. comp. proper.	longer	Y mae'r nos yn hwy na'r dydd eisoes. § 115 Gram.
hwn .	Demonstr. adj.	this	Prynnwch y llyfr hwn i mi.
hwn .	Demonstr. pron.	this	Hwn yw'r llyfr a brynnais.
hȳn .	Adj. Comp. proper	older	Y mae efe yn hȳn na'i frawd. § 115 Gram.
hun .	Noun	sleep, self	Wedi hun esmwyth dihunais. Euthum ato fy hun. § 139 Gram.
hîn .	Noun	weather	Bu'r hîn yn dymherus drwy'r haf
lle .	Noun	place	Symudodd i le newydd.
lle .	Conjunctive adv.	wherever whither-soever	Aed lle y mynno. § 348 Gram.
llaeth .	Noun	milk	Chwenychwch ddidwyll laeth y Gair.
llaith .	Adjective	damp	Y mae'r ddaear yn llaith.

THE SAME OR SIMILAR WORDS USED AS DIFFERENT PARTS
OF SPEECH (*continued*)—

Word.	Part of Speech.	Meaning.	Example.
mae	Verb	is	Pa le y mae dy lyfrau ?
mai	Conjunction	that	Dywedodd mai efe oedd biau y wobr.
mau .	Possessive adj.	my own (obsolete)	O maddeu fy anwiredd mau.
melin .	Noun	mill	Gwerthwyd melin y Fron y ddoe.
melyn	Adjective	yellow	Un o hoff liwiau'r beirdd Cymreig oedd melyn.
nad	Adverb in subord. clause	no, not	Ofnaf nad ellwch fyned § 592 Gram.
nid . .	Adverb in principal clause	no, not	Nid fy lle i yw gwrthod § 593 Gram.
o . . .	Preposition	from, of	Pwy o honoch ddaeth o'r lle gyntaf ?
o	Adverb	if	O bydd arnat eisieu, galw am danaf. § 354 Gram.
os . .	Adverb with indic.	if	Os gwelwch yn dda, gelwch am danaf. § 354 Gram.
pe .	Adverb with subj.	if	Pe gwnelai hyn, byddai ar fai. § 355 Gram.
pa .	Interrogative adj.	what ?	Pa bentref yw hwn ?
pwy .	Interrogative pron.	who ?	Pwy a ddywed im' ei hanes ?
peri .	Verb from paraf.	to cause	Ti a beri imi wylo o'i blegyd.
pery .	Verb from parhau.	to continue	Ei enw a bery tra bo haul.
pawb .	Indefinite pron.	all	Clywodd pawb y swn. § 589 Gram.
pob	Indef. numeral adjective	all	Ond nid pob un a ddeallodd ystyr.
tri . .	Numeral	three	Galwodd tri dyn am danat heddyw.
try . .	Verb from troi	he turns	Os try oddiwrth ei ddrwg, maddeu iddo.
y . . .	Definite article	the	Prynnodd y tŷ yn rhad.
y . . .	Relative pron.	who, or which in oblique case	Dyma'r tŷ y gwelais ei adeiladu. § 168 Gram.

THE SAME OR SIMILAR WORDS USED AS DIFFERENT PARTS
OF SPEECH (*continued*)—

Word.	Part of Speech.	Meaning.	Example.
y . .	Pre-verbal particle	Not translated	Y mae'r hîn yn deg. § 315 ; § 346.
yn . .	Preposition	in	Rhoddodd geiniog yn y blwch.
yn . .	Predicative	Not translated	Y mae efe yn athraw llwyddianus.
yn . .	Adverbial	Not translated	Gweithiodd yn egniol tros ben.
ynte .	Interrog. particle	or	Ai hwn ynte'r llall ddewisaist ti ? § 600 Gram.
yntau .	Conjunctive pron.	he also	A'r tad, yntau hefyd a fu farw.
yr . .	Definite article	the	Symudodd i wlad yr Aifft.
yr . .	Relative pron.	who, or which in oblique case	Dyma'r ysgol yr arferwn ei mynychu. § 168 Gram.
yr . .	Pre-verbal particle	Not translated	Yr oedd son lawer am dano.
yw . .	Verb	is	Nid yw efe yma. § 485 Gram.
i'w . .	Prepos. with poss. adj.	to his, to her, to their	Aeth i'w wely yn gynnar. § 141 Gram.

EXERCISE 33.

Parse separately each word in the following sentences :—
A. 1. Os yr Arglwydd nid adeilada'r ty, ofer y llafuria'r adeiladwyr wrtho.

2. Ys truan o ddyn wyf fi !   Pwy a'm gwared oddiwrth gorph y farwolaeth hon ?

3. Y sawl a dynno nyth y dryw, ni chaiff iechyd yn ei fyw.

4. Y llew fel yr ych a bawr wellt.

5. Bydded eich ymadrodd yn ' ie ' a ' nage.'

6. Aeth allan a hithau' n oer a chafodd anwyd.

7. Gan farw ti a fyddi farw.

8. A fynno iechyd bydded lawen.

9. Darllenasant i'r dall bob yn ail.

10. Fe fyddys yn cychwyn o'r tŷ am dri o'r gloch.

11. Marchnatewch hyd oni ddelwyf.

12. O ! na byddai'n haf o hyd.

B. Passages set for Parsing in the Welsh Matriculation.

1. Y mae gwatwareg ddeifiol yn gymysg a'i frawddegau mwyaf difrifol, ac yn ei ddywediadau mwyaf cyffredin ceir aml i frawddeg yn fflachio fel mellten nes goleuo'r gorwel o gwr i gwr. (1896.)

2. " Rhyw lon newyddion heddyw
   Yrrwyd im—a hyfryd yw." (June, 1908.)

3. " Dowch i'r farn a roir arnoch
   A dedwydd beunydd y boch." (September, 1907.)

4. Nid yw'r Golygydd yn gweled un angen am ddodi ger bron y cyhoedd yr esgusodion cyffredin a roddir tros gyhoeddi llyfrau. (1898.)

5. Hwn yw'r lle y mae crefyddwyr da Cwm Tyfolog yn addoli ynddo. (1899.)

6. Nid oedd dim nodedig yn neb o'i berthynasau oddieithr ei fam. (1900.)

7. Sonir yn gyffredin fod Elis Wyn wedi bwriadu cyhoeddi gweledigaeth arall, dan enw Gweledigaeth y Nef. (1901.)

8. Codwyd yr adeilad presennol ar adfeilion yr hen balas gan y llyngesydd Foley, gwr a enwogodd ei hun. (1902.)

9. Parse the words italicized in the following : (*a*) Ys truan o ddyn wyf fi. (*b*) Pwy yw y brenin gogoniant hwn ? (*c*) O'u cadw y mae gwobr lawer. (*d*) Hebddo Ef ni wnaethpwyd dim a'r a wnaethpwyd. (1903.)

10. Parse (*a*) Dilyn drygioni a dywys i angeu. (*b*) Gwae y dyn sydd yn cydio maes wrth faes. (1904.)

11. Explain, grammatically, the following expressions : Ambell i ddyn, fe'm gwelir, gwr o Iddew, paid a mi, cyn myned a hono ymaith, wedi darllen llyfr. (1905.)

12. Parse Aed, darffo, henffych well, nos dawch, gwypo, rhoid (1906.)

13. Parse dwg, henffych, gwnaethpwyd, darffo, canfyddwyf, ymedy, (June, 1907.)

C. More difficult passages from the Welsh classics for parsing :—

1. Ond o hir graffu mi a'u gwelwn hwy'n well a thecach eu gwedd na'r giwed felynddu, gelwyddog honno.

2. Gorweddais ar y gwelltglas, tan syn-fyfyrio deced a hawddgared wrth fy ngwlad fy hun oedd y gwledydd pell y gwelswn gip o olwg arnynt.

3. Gwaith ofer oedd iddo geisio cloi'r enaid a fedr fyw a thrafaelio heb y corph.

4. A chan ddaed ganddo ddrygioni, fe gais ddifa'r ddinas hon.

5. Ni cheisiai, ebr ef, ond gwaetha ungwr ddangos ei glanach hi'n holl stryd Balchder.

6. Deall hyn, O Eryr, canys ychydig a'i cenfydd nes iddo ddyfod.

7. Mi fedraf lyncu pob opiniwn am y caffwyf lonyddwch yn fy nyth.

8. Rwy'n gweled mai gwych yw bod yn gyfrwys pa le bynnag y bwyf.

9. Ni allai aros clywed y gerdd yma. Atolwg, gad lonydd imi i ehedeg lle mynnwyf.

10. Gwell yw'r wialen a blygo na'r hon a dorro o eisieu irder.

11. Oni ad efe yr amyn un pum ugain yn yr anialwch a myned ar ol yr hon a gollwyd hyd oni chaffo efe hi ?

12. Gwyn ei fyd a ddisgwylio ac a ddel hyd y mil trichant a phymtheg ar hugain o ddyddiau.

13.   O'm traserch darfum trosoch
           Ddwyn clwyf, fel lle bwyf y boch.

14.   Hysbys y dengys y dyn
           O ba radd y bo'i wreiddyn.

15.   Gwae fi, gwn boeni beunydd,
           Weled erioed liw dy rudd !
           Aeth dy wedd, Gwynedd a'i gŵyr,
           A'm hoes innau, a'm synwyr.

COMMON ERRORS IN WELSH SPELLING AND SENTENCE-CONSTRUCTION.

I. WELSH ORTHOGRAPHY.

In Appendix II of the Grammar the student is recommended to study the Rules of Welsh spelling in the " Report of the Orthographical Committee of the Society for utilizing the Welsh Language " published by the Welsh National Press Co., Ltd., Carnarvon. These Rules, which aim at securing the maximum of consistency and phonetic accuracy with the minimum of interference with existing general usage, are here summarized for the use of the student. They are practical in their spirit and are not meant to be pushed to their logical conclusion in all cases in the face of clearly established usage.

1. **How to write ' yn.'**

   With verb-nouns write *yn* followed by the radical consonant, as *Yn canu.* In adverbial phrases the component parts should be fused, as *Ymlaen, ynghyd, ymysg, ymhen.* The *n* of *yn* assimilates to the initial letter of a noun beginning with a mutable consonant, as *Yng Nghymru, ym Mhen y Graig, yn Nhalgarth, yng Ngobowen, ym Mlaenanerch, yn Ninas Mawddwy.*

2. **When to insert the inorganic ' h.'**

   When the syllable that precedes the accented one ends in a vowel or in *ng, m, n,* and *r* an inorganic *h* is often written before the accent, as *Dihareb, diarhebion ; angof, anghofio ; cymell, cymhellion ; brenin, brenhines ; aros, arhosaf.* **See §§ 34, 35 Gram.**

   An initial *h* is also added (*a*) to nouns beginning with vowels after the Possessive Adjectives (except *eich*), as *Ei hesgid* (her shoe. Cp. *ei esgid—his* shoe) ; (*b*) to verbs after the Postvocalic personal pronoun, as *efe a'm harbed* (he saves me) ; (*c*) to the word *ugain* when following *ar* in a compound numeral, as *Tri ar hugain* (twenty-three). **See §§ 68–71 Gram.**

3. **How to write compound words and phrases.**

If the compound is accented on the penult., write as
one word, as *Pwyslais*. If the elements are separately
accented, join by means of a hyphen, as *Rhag-arweiniad,
cyn-lywydd*.

If the first element is a noun, adjective or preposition
prefixed to a phrase, write all the words separately
without a hyphen, as *Cam gymeryd, di ben draw*.   **See
§§ 36, 37 Gram.**

4. **When to use the apostrophe.**

Write *yn, yr, eich,* and the other Postvocalic particles
as *'n, 'r, 'ch,* etc. after a vowel, unless a pause comes
between them and the preceding word ; as *Torri'r coed,
gweithio'n galed, galw'm gwas.* The article *yr* is practic-
ally always written as *'r* after *a, i, o, mo, tua,* and *gyda.*
It is better to omit all apostrophes from the middle of
words, as *ers, mynd, gorchmynion.*   **See § 146 Gram.**

5. **When to write ' ph ' and ' ff.'**

As far as possible write *ph* as the initial aspirate
mutation of *p,* and *ff* as the medial and final consonant ;
as *argraff, gorffwys* and *ei phen.*   **See §§ 51, 66 Gram.**

6. **When to double the consonant.**

Several good writers of the present generation show
a tendency to limit the doubling of consonants to *n*
and *r* only, leaving *t, p, c, m* and *s* to be always written
singly, as *hynny, torri, ateb, epil, drycin, amod* and *cyson.*
The *n* and *r* should be doubled only when preceded by a
closed accented vowel, as *absennol, cyrraedd.* The *n*
and *r* should be written singly when the vowel is open
and in all doubtful cases, as *tonau* (tunes) and *bara* (bread).
See Appendix II Gram.

N.B.—In all doubtful cases the safest plan is to follow the
orthography of the present Welsh Bible.

7. **How to distinguish the endings -ai, -ae, -au, -hau.**

Write *-ai, -au,* and *-hau* at the end of words only,
and *-ae* in the middle of words, as *gwelai* (he was seeing),
pethau (things), and *daear* (earth). The *-au,* being the
plural suffix of nouns, is never to be found in verbs,
except in verb-nouns that end in *-hau,* as *parhau, glanhau,*

coffau. The *-ai* is the ordinary 3rd. sing. Past Imperfect and Pluperfect ending of verbs, as *byddai*. **See §§ 236, 208 a Gram.**

8. **How to distinguish the prefixes di- and dy-.**

The safest and simplest rule is to use them according to the sound, as *dyfal* and *difyr*, *dylanwad* and *dioddef*.

9. **When to write the terminations -i and -u in verbs.**

Write *-i* when the *last* syllable of the Present stem has the vowel *o* or the diphthong *oe* or ends in *w*, as *crogi, oedi, sylwi* and *cyflawni*.

Write *-u* when the *last* syllable of the Present stem has vowels or diphthongs other than those enumerated, as *tynnu*, and *tagu*. Note, however, that *i* is not uncommon after syllables with *e* or *ei*, as *geni, gweiddi, gweini*. **See §§ 234, 235 Gram.**

10. **Combinations of consonants.**

Note the spelling of the following words—anhawster, neilltu, cosb, adsain, llanc, ieuanc, cymar (not cydmar), disgybl, dinistrio. Note also the spelling of araith, Beibl, blodau, Cymry (Welshmen), Cymru (Wales), diffeithwch, gwneuthur, hyd yn oed, lliaws (not lluos-og), Sais (Englishman), Saeson (Englishmen), Saesneg (English language), Seisnig (English), and uchaf (not uwchaf).

II. WELSH PROSE COMPOSITION.

In this section an effort is made to point out the Common Errors committed in writing Welsh, and, by drawing special attention to the grammatical rules which are violated, to show how such errors may be avoided. In the first place a list of the parallel idioms of English and Welsh is given, so that the student may compare the similarities and differences of the one with those of the other, and thus avoid the common error of imagining that to translate word for word or to follow the English order of words in a sentence will make an idiomatic Welsh sentence. Then a list of the commonest errors is added, together with exercises on the correction of such errors and on the translation of difficult sentences from idiomatic English into idiomatic Welsh and *vice versâ*.

(a) A Comparison of the Idioms of English and Welsh.

1. The Article :   Welsh has no Indefinite Article like English.

> Prynodd lyfr newydd.   (*He bought a new book.*)

The article is written in Welsh where it is unnecessary in   English.

> Ymwelodd y brenin Edward a'r Aifft.   (*King Edward visited Egypt.*)

The article is not written with the first of two nouns as in English, where the second depends on the first.

> A glywsoch chwi enw'r llyfr ?   (*Have you heard the name of the book ?*)

(See the Notes on the Article or Demonstrative Adjective, p. 16 Reader.)

2. The Noun :

English Proper nouns which have recognized Welsh equivalents should be translated by such forms, as Abertawe (*Swansea*), Caerefrog (*York*).   And in all other cases, the borrowed word, if it begins with a mutable consonant, should be mutated, as

> Aeth o Gapernaum i Fethlehem.   (*He went from Capernaum to Bethlehem.*)

Welsh distinguishes between grammatical Gender and Sex, therefore all the nouns which are Neuter in English must be translated as either Masculine or Feminine in Welsh.

> Y mae pont fach ger y tŷ hwn.   (Pont, *bridge. Fem.* ; tŷ, *house, Masc.*)

The Singular of many Welsh nouns is formed from the Plural (collective), and not all Plurals from the Singulars as in English.

> Adar, aderyn (*Birds, bird*) ; ser, seren (*stars, star*).

The nominative follows the verb in a normal Welsh sentence and usually retains the radical while the accusative follows the nominative and takes the soft mutation. In a normal English sentence the Subject comes first, the Predicate second, and the Object third.

> Daliodd y bachgen bysgod lawer.   (*The boy caught many fish.*)

The Genitive construction in Welsh translates both the English Possessive case and the case of the Objective after the preposition ' of.'

Adeilad cerryg yw tŷ'r dyn acw.   (*That man's house is a building of stone.*)

The Verb-noun is more of a noun in Welsh than in English and is far more extensively used.   Preference should always be given to the verb-noun over an abstract noun ending in suffixes like -iad and -iaeth.

For " Gwnaeth benderfyniad i weini cospedigaeth ar ei was cyflogedig," write Penderfynnodd gospi ei was cyflog.   (*He resolved to punish his hired servant.*)

3. The Adjective :

The normal position of a descriptive adjective in Welsh is immediately after the noun and not before it as in English.

Dyn da.   (*A good man.*)

The Welsh adjective does not usually agree with its noun in gender and number, preference being given to the masc. sing. adjective even with plural and feminine nouns.

Dyn mawr.   (*A big man.*)   Dynes fawr.   (*A big woman.*)   Pethau mawr. (*Great things.*)   Afonydd dwfn. (*Deep rivers.*)

Welsh has one more Degree of Comparison than English, viz., the Comparative of Equality (or the Equative Degree).

Cyn wynned a'r eira. (*As white as the snow.*)   Wynned yw'r eira !   (*How white is the snow !*)

The Welsh Comparative Proper is followed by the negative *na*, which translates the English *than*.

Y mae Dafydd yn gryfach na'i frawd.   (*David is stronger than his brother.*)

The Welsh Superlative often translates the English Comparative.

Y goreu o'r ddau.   (*The better of the two.*)   Goreu po gyntaf.   (*The sooner the better.*)

Welsh Numerals (both Cardinal and Ordinal), like their English equivalents, precede their nouns ; but in Welsh,

the nouns remain singular and are often written between the parts of a compound numeral.

Saith niwrnod. (*Seven days.*)   Y trydydd dydd. (*The third day.*)   Yr unfed bennod ar bymtheg. (*The sixteenth chapter.*)

The Predicate adjective is introduced by the particle *yn* (not translated into English), which is followed by the Soft Mutation.

A yw eich brawd yn gloff ?   (*Is your brother lame ?*)

4. **The Pronoun :**

The Personal Pronoun has four distinct forms in Welsh, three of which have no distinct equivalents in English, viz., the Postvocalic, Emphatic and Conjunctive. **See §§ 130–132 Grammar.**

Formal pronouns are frequently used to introduce verbs in Welsh, and the ordinary pronouns are likewise repeated for the sake of emphasis after verbs.

Mi welaf le.   (*I see a place.*)   Gwyddoch chwi am fy llyfrau *i*. (*You know about my books.*)

The Welsh Demonstrative Adjective follows its noun and that noun is always preceded by the Article.

Y dyn hwn.   (*This man.*)

The verb in a Welsh Relative clause is usually in the 3rd singular, even when the antecedent is a plural noun. It is only when the antecedent is a pronoun that the Welsh Relative, like the English, has the verb in agreement with it.

Dyma'r dynion a ddaeth atom.   (*These are the men who came to us.*)   Mi a welais y rhai a alwasant arno. (*I saw them who called upon him.*)

5. **The Adverb :**

English Adverbs in -*ly* are translated into Welsh by means of the corresponding Adjective preceded by *yn*.

Gweithiodd yn egniol.   (*He worked energetically.*)

Welsh Questions are introduced by special interrogative particles such as *a, ai*. The English answers *yes* and *no* are variously expressed in Welsh, sometimes by *do, ie ; naddo, nage ; oes, nac oes*, and sometimes by repeating the verb of the Question clause.

A alwasoch arno ? Do. (*Did you call upon him?* *Yes.*)

Ai arnaf fi y galwasoch ? Nage. (*Was it upon me you called? No.*)

A oes bwyd gennych ? Oes. (*Have you any food? Yes.*)

A wnewch chwi alw arno ? Gwnaf. (*Will you call upon him? Yes.*)

6 The Preposition :

Certain Prepositions in Welsh are inflected with pronominal suffixes, such as those typified by *danaf, hebof,* and *gennyf.*

Peidiwch myned hebof. (*Do not go without me.*)

The English *of* in such prepositions as *for the sake of, in spite of, into the midst of, on account of, in the presence of, at the end of,* and so on, has nothing to correspond to it in the Welsh prepositional, phrase, but is implied in the genitive relation of the nouns.

Ymhen deuddydd. (*At the end of two days.*)

The idiomatic uses of the prepositions should be carefully compared with those of English. **See §§ 388–444 Grammar.**

Note : yn (*in*) is used before words defined by the article ; also before Proper names and most pronouns.

mewn (*in*) is used before words **un**defined.

gan with the Verb-noun, as Gan farw ti a fyddi farw. (*Thou shalt surely die.*)

gan with the verb *Bod* translates the English *has* or *have ; e.g.,* Y mae gennyf lyfr. (*I have a book.*)

Wrth in comparisons translates the English *compared with.* Hawddgared wrth fy ngwlad fy hun yw'r gwledydd pell. (*How fair compared with my own country are the distant lands.*)

7. The Verb :

The Welsh verb has no Middle Voice. For the form_er the prefix *ym-* is added to the verb to give it a reflexive force.

Ymolchaf. (*I wash myself.*)

The Welsh simple verb has no separate forms for the

pairs of tenses Present and Future, Aorist and Perfect.

The Welsh Verb-noun, compounded with suitable prepositions, translates the English Infinitive and Participle, the Absolute construction and the Periphrastic tenses.

Arferwn gerdded y ffordd yna beunydd wrth fyned tua'r ysgol. (*I used to walk that road daily in going to school.*)

For the verb *is*, Welsh has four different forms, *mae*, *yw*, *oes* and *sydd* and the idiomatic use of each form should be carefully noted. **See §§ 484–490 Grammar.**

The Regular Welsh verb has a special strong form for its 3rd sing. present indicative, which should always be used in preference to the colloquial and periphrastic forms.

Yr Arglwydd a edwyn y cyfiawn. (Not ' adwaena ' nor ' y mae yn adnabod.') (*The Lord knoweth the righteous.*)

The Verb comes first in a Normal Welsh sentence, and frequently it includes the Subject (when a pronoun) within itself. In English, on the other hand, the pronoun nominative is always written separately and the subject usually precedes the verb.

Dychwelaf yfory. (*I shall return to-morrow.*)

Welsh shows a fondness for the 3rd singular verb in the following constructions :—

(*a*) In a sentence of the normal order, when the Subject is a noun or pronoun other than personal :

Daeth pobl lawer ynghyd. (*Many people came together.*) Pwy yw y rhai hyn ? (*Who are these ?*)

(*b*) In a sentence where the verb To be follows its Subject :

Enwau'r cystadleuwyr yw. (*The names of the competitors are.*)

(*c*) In a sentence of the inverted order the verb of the Relative clause after *a* is always 3rd singular.

Wele'r llyfrau a brynodd fy mrawd. (*Behold the books which my brother bought.*)

It should be noticed therefore that the concord of the

verb with its subject in English is far from being the common rule in Welsh.

(*b*) **Common Errors.**

The following are cautions as to the points of orthography, syntax, and style with regard to which mistakes are most frequently made :—

1. Avoid using *m*, *n* and *ng* as the Nasal mutation of words beginning with *p*, *t*, and *c*. **See § 60 Grammar.**

2. Note that the Voiced or Soft mutation is used to indicate the Nominative of Address, the Accusative case after a transitive verb, the Accus. after certain prepositions such as *am*, *i* and so on, and in the second element of compound words and breath-groups. **See p. 77, Type A, Grammar.**

3. Note that the aspirate mutation follows *a* (and), *â* (with), *na* (nor), *tua* (towards), *trā* (very), *ei* (her), *tri* (three), and *chwe* (six). **See p. 79, Type B, Grammar.**

4. Note that the Nasal mutation follows *yn* (in), and *saith*, *wyth*, *naw*, *deg* in the case of *diwrnod* (day) and *blynedd* (year) only. **See p. 79, Type C, Grammar.**

5. Avoid writing the Soft mutation after *un* (one) and *y* (the) in feminine nouns beginning with *ll* and *rh*. Cp. y lle, y rhes, un llaw, un rhan.

6. The inorganic *h* should not be omitted in the following constructions :—After *m*, *n*, *ng*, *r* or a vowel in an accented syllable. Prefixed to initial vowels of nouns after *ei* (her), eu (*their*), ein (*our*), but not eich (*your*). Attached to *ugain* (twenty) in compound numerals.
In verbs following the post-vocalic acc. pers. pron. '*i*. **See §§ 34, 35 ; 68–71 Grammar.**

7. The different mutations that follow *yn* should not be confused, viz., *yn* + verb-noun. (Radical retained.) yn canu ; *yn* + adjective. (Voiced mutation.) Canodd yn dda. *yn* + noun. (Nasal mutation.) Yng Nghymru. Note the exception ' yn Gymraeg ' (*in Welsh*) and ' yng Nghymraeg y Beibl ' (*in the Welsh of the Bible*). **See §§ 436–439 Grammar.**

8. Care should be taken not to confuse nouns with double plurals of different meanings. **See § 90 Grammar.**

9. Since all the neuter nouns of English are either Masculine or Feminine in Welsh, careful observation of usage is necessary to avoid confusing the genders. **See §§ 100–112 Grammar.**

10. The short lists of Feminine and Plural Adjectives should be learnt, so that their correct usage with feminine or plural nouns may be observed. Feminine nouns, for example, should not be preceded by a masculine numeral. **See §§ 99, 103, 121, 122–127 Grammar.**

11. The use of the particles *mor* and *cyn* in the comparison of adjectives should be carefully noted. **See §§ 118–120 Grammar.**

12. Avoid using *pwy ?* (Interrogative Pronoun—who ?) for *pa* (Inter. Adjective—what ?)   The former always stands alone and the latter always precedes a noun. Similarly *pawb* should be used as a noun and *pob* as an adjective. Distinguish between the use of *ei* (his) followed by the Soft Mutation and *ei* (her) followed by the Aspirate.   *Ei* (singular, his or her) should not be confused with *eu* (plural, their).   Note also that *i'w* stands for *i ei* or *i eu* and translates *to his, to her* or *to their*. **See §§ 132 a, 141, 158 Grammar.**

13. Avoid using *yr hwn, yr hon, pa un, pa rai* to translate the English Relative pronouns into Welsh, when the forms *a* and *y* will suffice. **See §§ 167, 168 Grammar.**

14. The following words should not be confused :—gartref (*at home*) with adref (*towards home*), Cymru (*Wales*) with Cymry (*the Welsh people*), Saesneg (*the English language*) with Seisnig (*English*), o hono, o honi (*of him, of her*) with honno (*that, fem.*) and honni (*to assert*).

15. It should be noted that in prepositions conjugated with pronominal suffixes, the *-dd* appears only in the 3rd person, masc. and fem. sing. and plural. **See § 293, no. 2 Grammar.**

16. Care should be taken in writing Welsh verbs—

   (*a*) That the Present Subjunctive in -*wyf* be not used for the Present Indicative in -*af*.

   (*b*) That *to*, the sign of the English Infinitive, be not translated into Welsh. The verb-noun without *i* will generally suffice.

   (*c*) That the verb in the Welsh Relative clause is 3rd *singular* in all cases except when the antecedent is a personal pronoun.

   (*d*) That the 3rd singular *yw* (is) should be used even with plural nominatives, as Enwau'r cystadleuwyr yw (not *ydynt*). Note also the idiomatic usage of *mae*, *yw*, *oes* and *sydd* to translate the English *is*.

   (*e*) That the simple verb should generally be preferred to the periphrastic tenses : i.e., for ' oeddynt wedi gweled ' write ' gwelsent.'

   (*f*) Auxiliaries and weak words such as *cael* should be avoided as far as possible in verbal constructions.   For ' y mae efe yn cael ei gydnabod ' write ' cydnabyddir ef.'

   (*g*) The Sequence of tenses should be carefully observed.   For ' *Os aeth* heb ddweyd *buasai* yn arwydd o ofn ' write ' Os aeth . . byddai. . .'

17. Literary Prose Style would also be improved if the following errors were avoided :—

   (*a*) The writing of colloquial forms for those of literary Welsh, such as *llefydd* for *lleoedd*, *sers* for *ser*, etc.

   (*b*) The separating of prepositions from their objects, such as Cofiais am ac ufuddheais i 'r gorchymyn, for Cofiais am y gorchymyn ac ufuddheais iddo.

   (*c*) Redundancy of expression.

   (*d*) Violation of the normal order of words except when the need for a particular emphasis justifies the inversion.   Things which are to be thought of together must be mentioned as closely as possible together.

(*e*) The use of two different kinds of construction in the same sentence.

(*f*) The use of words spelt or pronounced alike but differing in meaning and origin.

(*g*) The literal imitation of English phrase, such as Yr wyf yn alluog i (*I am able to*) for Gallaf. Ei fynediad a dyfodiad (*His coming and going*) for Ei fynd a dod. Nid oeddwn yn ymwybodol o'i bresenoldeb (*I was not conscious of his presence*) for Ni wyddwn ei fod yno. Fel mater o ffaith (*as a matter of fact*) for Yn wir.

Exercise 34.

(*a*) Correct the orthography of the following words where necessary, giving your reason in each case :— *cynghor, cydmarol, ychain, cynheuaf, ysgrifenwyd, lluosog, dysglair, cymmaint, cyddio, cynganheddol.* (*Matric.* 1908, July.)

(*b*) Correct the errors in the following sentences :—

' Clywais rhai yn dweyd fel hyn.'

' Daeth i fy mryd, dair neu bedair mlynedd yn ol, i ymweled a Llanwddyn.'

' Rhoddodd i ni fawr foddhad i sylwi ar ei ddull pwyllog a theg ef o edrych ar y pwnc.'

' Os aeth yr haul i lawr yn goch-lwyd, buasai hynny yn arwydd o dywydd teg.'

' Coeliwyf mai gwell peidio os y daw efe gartref heno.'

' A ganlyn ydynt yr enwau.'

' Pa beth yw hynny yn Nghymraeg ? '   (*Matric.* 1896.)

' Fel ei traddodir gan y brenhin.'

' Mae yn ei fwriad i ail agor ei chwarel.'

' I'r un amcan ag y dugodd Israel yr arch i'r gwersyll.'

' I Rhys ab Meredydd.'

' Onid ellid trefni i gael pwyllgor ? '

' Ai ni wnaeth efe brynu palas ? '

' A ydym ni yn wir sylweddoli y pwysigrwydd ? '

' Ar gyfrifoldeb eu hunain.'

' Rhyw noson dywell aeth tua'r rhos.'   (*Matric.* 1901.)

' Byw yn Gaer Dydd.'

' Cerdded i Bangor.'

' Myned gartref.'

' Pregethu yn Nghymraeg.'

' Llawer o lefydd tlysion.'

' Mae arno awydd i fyned.'

' Y rhai hyn ydynt yr enwau.'

' Pawb a ddaethant yma.'

' Y wlad am ffrwythlondeb yr hon yr oeddent wedi clywed son.' (*Matric.* 1902.)

' Peidiwch a dianc hebddom ni.'

' Y prif resymau yw y rhai a ganlynant.'

' Pwy ddyn a welsoch ? '

' Ag un law heuodd un res o ffa.'

' Dacw'r bechgyn pa rai a ddiangasant o'r ysgol.'

' Parchus gynulleidfa, gwrandewch !

' Aeth y plant ei hunain i'r ysgol.'

' Y bobl am ba rai yr ydym yn son.'

' Fe rhanwyd gwlad Canaan rhwng llwythi Israel ?

' Ceisiai ysgrifennu yn Gymraeg y clasuron.'

' Pawb dynion sydd farwol.'

' Wedi saith blynedd dychwelodd gartref.'

' Torrais fy mys a cyllell lym.'

' Dyma'r llanc am yr hwn yr oeddem yn sôn.'

' Y dynion a ddywedasant wrthi am wneud felly erddym.

(*c*) Translate the following expressions into idiomatic Welsh or English as required :—

I. 1. Goreu awen, gwirionedd. 2. Mewn undeb mae nerth. 3. Nid byd, byd heb wybodaeth. 4. Goreu arf, arf dysg. 5. You deceive yourselves. 6. Let justice be done. 7. To err is human. 8. I am determined to go. (*Matric.* 1903.)

II. 1. Aml donc a dyr y garreg. 2. A fo ben bid bont. 3. Gan y tri hyn y llas traian y dynion. 4. Wedi ail ennill ei wlad gwaith nesaf Rhys oedd ail ennill ei awdurdod. 5. When they are not quarrelling, they are fighting. 6. Go and tell him that he is to come at once. 7. Those who leave before the time will lose

their places. 8. You have been told a hundred times at least to do this. (*Matric.* 1904.)

III. 1. Nid digon un byd. 2. Gelyn i ddyn yw ei dda. 3. Gwell gwegil câr na gwyneb estron. 4. Cas yw'r gwirionedd lle ni charer. 5. A penny saved is a penny gained. 6. Let the truth prevail. 7. The history of the world is the history of its greatest men. 8. He must go before you can possibly return. (*Matric.* 1905.)

IV. 1. I knew his brother quite well but I never knew where he lived. 2. He never meant to come. 3. It matters little to me whether you go or stay. 4. Can you come and see us without their knowing it ? 5. Breathless and tired, he came in first. (*Matric.* 1906.)

VOCABULARY

I. WELSH INTO ENGLISH

A

A, ac, ag, *and, with, as.*
a, ai, *untranslatable interrogative particles.*
abl, *sufficient, able.*
acw, *yonder, there.*
achos, *cause, reason.*
achub, *to save, defend.*
adeilad, *a building.*
adar, *birds.*
adnod, *a verse.*
adran, *a part, subdivision.*
adref, *homeward.*
adwaen, *to know ;* adwaenir, *is known.*
addewid, *a promise.*
addysg, *education.*
aed, *let him go ;* aeth, *he went ;* af, *I shall go.*
afon, *river.*
agos, *near.*
angau, *death.*
angenrheidiol, *necessary.*
Aifft, *Egypt.*
ail, *second.*
Alecsander, *Alexander.*
allan, *out.*
am, *for, about, of ;* amdano, *for him.*
ameu, *to doubt.*
aml, *often ;* yn aml, *frequently.*
amryw, *many.*
amser, *time.*
Amwythig, *Shrewsbury.*
amynedd, *patience.*
anialwch, *wilderness, desert.*
anrhydeddu, *to honour.*

anthem, *anthem.*
anwyl, *dear, beloved.*
ar, on, *upon ;* arnaf, *upon me.*
ar ol, *behind, after.*
ar unwaith, *at once.*
araf, *slow.*
arall, *another ;* ereill, *others.*
Arglwydd, *Lord.*
argraffu, *to print, to impress.*
arian, *money.*
aros, *to wait, stay, remain.*
asyn, *a he-ass.*
at, *to ;* ato, *to him.*
ateb, *to answer.*
ato, *in the phrase Na ato Duw, God forbid !*
atolwg, *beseeching, I pray thee.*
athraw, *teacher.*
awdwr, *author.*
awn, *let us go, we go.*
awr, *hour ;* awr ginio, *dinner hour.*
Awst, *August.*

B

Bachgen, *a boy.*
Bala, *Bala.*
bara, *bread.*
barddoniaeth, *poetry.*
barn, *opinion ;* barnu, *to judge.*
bedd, *grave, sepulchre.*
beirniadu, *to criticise, judge.*
benthyg, *loan, a borrowed thing.*
beth, *What ? Cp. Pa beth ?*
beunydd, *daily ;* beunyddiol, *daily.*

blaen, *point ;* o'r blaen, *first, before.*

blino, *to become weary ;* blinir, *is troubled.*

blodau, *flowers.*

bloeddio, *to shout.*

blwydd, blynedd, blwyddyn, *a year.*

bo, *he may be ;* bod, *to be ;* boed, *let it be.*

boddi, *to drown.*

boddlawn, *willing ;* boddloni, *to satisfy.*

bore, *the morning.*

braint, *privilege.*

bran, *a crow.*

brawd, *brother.*

brenin, *king ;* brenhinol, *royal.*

bron, *breast, side of a hill.*

brwnt, *dirty.*

bryn, *hill.*

brysio, *to hasten ;* brysiog, *hasty ;* yn frysiog, *hastily.*

buan, *soon.*

buasai, *it would have been.*

buwch, *cow.*

bwrw, *to cast ;* bwrw eira, *to snow.*

bwyd, *food.*

byd, *world.*

bydd, bu, *he will be ; he was.*

bys, *finger.*

byw, *to live ;* bywyd, *life.*

C

cadarn, *strong.*

cadw, *to keep ;* cadwedig, *saved.*

cae, *field, enclosure.*

cael, *to find, receive ;* cael cynnyg, *to receive an offer.*

Caer, *Chester.*

Caerdydd, *Cardiff.*

caf, *I shall have ;* caf ddod, *I shall be allowed to come ;* caffed, *let him have.*

cais, *request.*

camp, *a task.*

camsyniad, *a mistake ;* camsynied, *to mistake.*

cân, caneuon, caniadau, *song songs.*

càn, cant, *hundred.*

canfyddid, *it was perceived.* See canfod.

canmol, *to praise.*

canol, *the middle.*

canu, *to sing.*

canys, *for, because.*

cardota, *to beg alms.*

caredig, *kind.*

cariad, *love.*

carreg, *a stone.*

cartref, *home ;* cartrefu, *to dwell, to live.*

caru, *to love.*

caseg, *mare.*

castell, *a castle.*

cath, *a cat.*

cawn, *we shall have.*

cefais, *I found.*

ceffyl, *horse.*

ceiliog, *cock.*

ceisio, *to seek.*

cerdded, *to walk.*

ci, cwn, *dog, dogs.*

claddu, *to bury.*

cloddio, *to dig.*

cloff, *lame.*

clywed, *to hear ;* clybu, *he heard.*

cneua, *to go a-nutting.*

coch, *red.*

codi, *to arise.*

coed, *trees.*

coelio, *to believe.*

cofio, *to remember.*

colli, *to lose.*

concwest, *victory, conquest.*

condemnio, *to condemn.*

corff, *body.*

coron, *crown.*

cospi, *to punish.*

craig, *rock.*

credu, *to believe.*

creulondeb, *cruelty.*

croen, *skin.*

cryf, *strong.*

crynnu, *to tremble.*

cuddiedig, *hidden.*

cul, *narrow.*
cwbl, *all, whole.*
cwningen, *rabbit.*
cwr, *end, edge.*
cwrdd, *to meet.*
cychwyn, *to start.*
cyd-efrydwyr, *fellow-students.*
cydnabod, *to acknowledge.*
cyfaill, *friend.*
cyfamod, *covenant.*
cyfamser, *meantime.*
cyfarfod, *to meet ;* cyfarfod canu, *singing practice.*
cyfeiriad, *address.*
cyfiawn, *righteous.*
cyflym, *quick.*
cyfodi, *to arise.*
cyfoeth, *riches ;* cyfoethog, *rich.*
cyfraith, *law.*
cyfrifoldeb, *responsibility.*
cyff, *trunk of a tree.*
cyffesu, *to confess.*
cyngor, *advice.*
cyllell, *knife.*
cymdogion, *neighbours.*
cymeryd, *to take.*
Cymraeg, Cymreig, *Welsh.*
Cymro, *Welshman ;* Cymraes, *Welshwoman.*
Cymru, *Wales ;* Cymry, *the Welsh people ;* Cymru Fu, *Wales of the past.*
cymysg, *mixed.*
cyn, *before ;* cyn hir, *soon, ere long ;* cyn pen mis, *before a month is over.*
cyn, *as ;* cyn wynned a, *as white as.*
cynnes, *warm.*
cynrychiolydd, *representative.*
cyntaf, *first.*
cyrchu, *to fetch,* or *bring.*
cyrraedd, *to reach.*
cysgu, *to sleep.*
cywilyddus, *shameful.*
cywir, *true, faithful.*

CH

chwaer, *sister.*

chwarae, *to play.*
chwech, *six.*
chwerthin, *to laugh.*
chwilio, *to search.*

D

Da, *good ;* yn dda, *well.*
dacw, *see yonder, behold.*
dadl, *debate ;* dadleu, *to discuss.*
dafad, *sheep.*
Dafydd, *David.*
dangos, *to show.*
dail, *leaves.*
daioni, *goodness, benefit.*
dal, *to catch.*
danfon, *to send.*
dant, *tooth.*
darfod, *to cease ;* darffo, *it shall end.*
darllen, *to read.*
dau, *two.*
daw, *he will come.*
deall, *to understand.*
dechreu, *to begin.*
defnyddio, *to use.*
derbyn, *to receive.*
derw, *oak.*
deuddeg, *twelve.*
deuddydd, *two days.*
deuwch, *come (ye).* See Dyfod.
dewis, *to wish, choose, take.*
dewr, *brave.*
dianc, *to escape.*
diau, *certain ;* yn ddiau, *un-doubtedly.*
dibyn, *edge.*
dichon, *possible, it is possible.*
dieithr, *strange ;* dieithr-ddyn, *a stranger.*
diflas, *miserable.*
difyr, *interesting.*
diffygio, *to faint, fail.*
digio, *to offend, be offended.*
digon, *enough.*
dilyn, *to follow.*
dim, *nothing.*
diolch, *to thank.*
disgwyl, *to expect, look for.*

disgyn, *to fall.*
diwedd, *end ;* o'r diwedd, *at last.*
diweddar, *late ;* diweddaraf, *latest.*
diwyd, *energetic.*
do, *yes.*
dodrefn, *furniture.*
doe, *yesterday.*
doed a ddelo, *come what may.*
doeth, *wise.*
dôl, *meadow.*
dolur, *disease.*
dont, *they will come.* See Dyfod.
dosbarth, *class.*
drachefn, *again.*
Drefnewydd (Y), *Newtown.*
dros, *over ;* drosto, *for him, on his behalf.*
drud, *expensive.*
drws, *door.*
du, *black ;* dued, *how black !*
Duw, *God.*
dwfn, *deep.*
dwfr, *water.*
dwyfol, *divine.*
dwyn, *to bear, bearing.*
dwyrain, *east.*
dychwelyd, *to return.*
dydd, *day.*
dyfod, *to come.*
Dyfrdwy, *the Dee.*
dyffryn, *valley.*
dygo, Subj. 3 s. of dwyn, *to bring.*
dylai, *he should, ought.*
dyma, *see, here is, behold.*
dymuniad, *desire.*
dyn, dynes, *man, woman.*
dynol, *human.*
dyro, *give (thou),* dyry, *he shall give.*
dysgu, *to learn, to teach.*
dywedyd, *to say, tell ;* dweyd ei fod, *to say that he is.*

E

Ebe, *said he.*
echdoe, *day before yesterday.*
echnos, *night before last.*

edmygu, *to admire.*
edrych, *to look.*
edwyn, *he knows.* See adwaen.
ef, efe, *he, it.*
eglwys, *church.*
ei, *his, her ;* ei heiddo hi, *hers.*
ei, *thou wilt go.* See Af (*I go*).
Eidal, *Italy.*
eich, *your.*
eiddo pwy ? *whose ?*
cin, *our ;* ein gilydd, *one another.*
eira, *snow.*
eisoes, *already.*
eistedd, *to sit.*
eleni, *this year.*
eloch, 2 pl. Subj. of Myned *to go.*
Emanuel, *Immanuel.*
emyn, *hymn.*
ennill, *to win.*
enw, *name.*
er, *although, however ;* er pan, *since ;* er mwyn, *for the sake of.*
ereill, *others.*
erioed, *never, ever.*
eryr, *eagle.*
esgeulusdod, *negligence.*
eto, *again, still.*
Ethiop, *Ethiopian.*
eu, *their ;* eu hunain, *themselves.*
ewyllys, *will.*
ewythr, *uncle.*

F

Fel, *as, so that.*
felly, *so, thus.*
fy, *my ;* fy hun, *myself.*
fyny, i fyny, *upwards.*

Ff.

Ffair, *fair.*
ffenestr, *window.*
fferm, *farm.*
ffigysbren, *fig-tree.*
ffol, *foolish.*
ffon, *stick.*
ffordd, *road, way.*
ffuon, *rose, of a blushing hue.*
ffyrnig, *fierce.*

G

Gadael, *to leave, allow* ; gad, *let.*
gair, *word* ; gair am air, *word for word.*
galw, *to call.*
gallu, *to be able* ; gallaf, *I can.*
galluog, *clever.*
gan, *since, with, by* ; gan fy mod, *since I am.*
ganwyd, *was born.*
gardd, *garden.*
gartref, *at home.*
gelyn, *enemy.*
gerllaw, *near.*
gewyn, *muscle.*
glân, *edge, side* ; glan y môr, *seaside.*
glynu, *to cling.*
gobaith, *hope* ; gobeithio, *to hope.*
goddef, *to stand* or *bear.*
goddiweddu, *to overtake.*
gofal, *care.*
gofyn, *to ask.*
golwg, *sight* ; golygfa, *scene.*
gonestrwydd, *honesty.*
gorchfygu, *to defeat, conquer.*
goreu, *best* ; o'r goreu, *very well.*
gorfodi, *to force* ; gorfod myned, *to be obliged to go.*
gorfyddai (pe), *were (I) compelled.*
gorchymyn, *to command.*
gorffen, *to end, finish.*
gorffwys, *to rest.*
gormod, *too much.*
gosod, *to place.*
grudd, *cheek* ; deurudd, *cheeks.*
gwadu, *to deny.*
gwael, *poor;* pur wael, *rather poor.*
gwair, *hay.*
gwaith, *time,* as in unwaith.
gwartheg, *cattle, cows.*
gwas, *servant.*
gweddio, *to pray.*
gweithio, *to work.*
gweithred, *act, action.*
gweled, *to see.*
gwell, *better* ; gwell yw gennyf, *I prefer.*

gwella, *to improve.*
gwellt, *straw.*
gwers, *lesson.*
gwerth, *value* ; gwerthfawr, *valuable.*
gwerthfawrogi, *to appreciate.*
gwerthu, *to sell.*
gwir, *true* ; y gwir, *the truth.*
gwisgo, *to wear.*
gwlad, *country.*
gwlaw, *rain.*
gwlyb, *wet.*
gwn, *I know* ; fel y gwypwyf, *that I may know.*
gwnaf gofio, *I shall remember.*
gwneud, *to do, set* ; gwneud camsyniad, *to err.*
gwobr, *prize, reward.*
gwobrwyo, *to reward.*
gwr, *man, husband.*
gwraig, *woman, wife.*
gwrando, *to hear, listen.*
gwrhydri, *heroism.*
gwthio, *to push.*
gwyddonol, *scientific.*
gwyliau, *holidays.*
gwyn, *white.*
Gwynedd, *North Wales.*
gwyrdd, *green.*
gyda, *with.*
gymaint, *as much.*
gynt, *formerly* ; gynted, *as soon.*

H

Haf, *summer.*
Hafren, *the Severn.*
hamddenol, *leisurely.*
hannu, *to descend.*
hardd, *fair, beautiful, pretty.*
haws, *easier.*
heb, *without.*
heddwch, *peace.*
heddyw, *to-day.*
hefyd, *also.*
heibio, *by, besides.*
helynt, *affair.*
hen, *old.*
henffych, *hail !*

hir, *long ;* yn hir, *for long.*
hoff, *fond.*
hoffi, *to like.*
holl, *all, the whole.*
hwde, *take* (Inper.).
hwn, *this ;* hwn yma, *this here ;*
  hwn acw, *that yonder.*
hwrdd, *ram.*
hwyr, *evening, late.*
hwyrach, *probably, perhaps.*
hyd, *till ;* hyd oni, hyd nes, *until.*
hyfryd, *fair, fine.*
hyn, *this ;* hynny, *those.*
hynafgwr, *elder, old man.*

I

I, *for, to, into, unto.*
Iach, *healthy ;* iachus, *healthy.*
iaith, *language.*
iar, *hen.*
iawn, *very ;* mawr iawn, *very much.*
iddo, *to him.*
ie, *yes.*
Iesu, *Jesus.*
ieuanc, *young.*
imi, *to me.*
Iuddewon, *Jews.*
Iwerddon, *Ireland ;* Môr Iwerddon, *Irish Sea.*

LL

Lladrata, *to steal.*
lladd, *to kill.*
lladd gwair, *to mow hay.*
llafurio, *to labour, to work.*
llai o dir, *less land.*
llais, *voice.*
llarpio, *to devour.*
llath, *yard.*
llaw, *hand.*
llawer, *much, many.*
llawr, i lawr, *down, downwards.*
lle, *place, where ;* pa le, *where.*
lle bynnag, *wherever.*
llef, *cry.*
llefain, *to cry.*
lleidr, *thief.*

lletya, *to dwell.*
llew, *lion.*
llithro, *to slip.*
Lloegr, *England.*
llogell, *pocket.*
llong, *ship.*
llosgi, *to burn.*
Llundain, *London.*
llwm, *bare.*
llwybr, *path.*
llwyddiant, *progress.*
llwyddo, *to get on, to succeed.*
llwythau, *tribes.*
llwytho, *to load.*
llydan, *broad, wide.*
llyfr, *book.*
llyfrgell, *library, book case.*
llygad, *eye.*
llynedd, *last year.*
llythyr, *letter.*

M

Mab, *son.*
maddeu, *to forgive.*
mae, *there is.*
mai, *that.*
Mai, *May.*
mam, *mother.*
màn, yn y màn, *by and by.*
mān, *small.*
manna, *manna.*
marchnad, *market.*
marw, *to die.*
masnachwr, *tradesman.*
mawr, yn fawr iawn, *large, very much.*
medru, *to be able.*
medd, *he says.*
meddiannu, *to own.*
meddiannydd, *owner.*
meddwl, *to think.*
meddyg, *doctor.*
meistr, meistres, *master, mistress.*
melus, *sweet.*
melyn, *yellow.*
mentro, *to venture, to risk.*
menyg, *gloves.*
merch, *daughter, girl.*

methu, *to fail.*
mewn, i fewn, *in, within.*
mil, *thousand.*
milwr, *soldier.*
milltir, *mile.*
mis, *month.*
modryb, *aunt.*
modd, *way, mode.*
moes, *give,* Imper.
mor, *so.*
môr, *sea.*
mo'r, dim o'r, *none of.*
morwyn, *maid.*
mwy, yn fwy, *more.*
myfi yw, *it is I.*
myned, *to go.*
mynych, *often, frequently.*
mynychu, *to frequent.*
mynnu, *to will, to like.*
mynydd, *mountain.*
myrddiwn, *tens of thousands.*

N

Na, *than, no.*
Nadolig, *Christmas.*
nant, *brook.*
Nasareth, *Nazareth.*
naw o'r gloch, *nine o'clock.*
nefoedd, *heaven.*
neithiwr, *last night.*
nes, *until.*
nesaf, *next.*
neu, *or.*
newydd, *new.*
newyddion, *news.*
ni, *we.*
ni, nid, *not, never.*
nis, as in nis gallaf, *I cannot.*
nofio, *to swim.*
nos, noswaith, *night.*
nyth, *nest.*

O

O, *of, from.*
o bell, *from afar.*
oblegid, *because.*
ochr, *side.*
oddicartref, *from home.*

oddiwrth, *from.*
oed, *age.*
oedd, *he was.*
oen, *lamb.*
oer, *cold.*
oeri, *to grow cold.*
oes, *is, lifetime.*
ofni, *to fear.*
o gwbl, *at all.*
o honof, lit., *out of me.*
o hyd, *always, continually.*
o hyn allan, *from this time forth.*
olaf, yn olaf, *last, lastly.*
o na ! *oh that ! would that !*
ond, *but.*
oni, *unless, if not.*
o'r blaen, *before.*
os, *if.*

P

Pa, *what.*
pa beth bynnag, *whatever, whatso-
ever.*
pa bryd bynnag, *whenever.* •
pa mor anhawdd bynnag, *however
difficult.*
paham ? *why ?*
palas, *palace.*
pan, *when.*
papurau, *papers.*
paradwys, *Paradise.*
parch, *respect.*
parhau, *to continue.*
parod, *ready.*
parodd, *it set, it caused.*
Pasg, *Easter.*
pawb, *all.*
pe, *if ;* pe rhoiswn, *had I given.*
pechaduriaid, *sinners.*
peidiwch, *do not.*
pell, *far.*
pen, *head.*
pennod, *chapter.*
pentref, *village.*
perffaith, *perfect.*
peth, *thing ;* peth felly, *such a
thing.*
piau, *he owns.*

pla, *plague.*
plant, *children.*
pluf, *feathers.*
po, *the,* + Superl.
pob, *every ;* pob amser, *always.*
pobl, *people.*
pori, *to graze.*
porth, *gate.*
pregethwr, *preacher.*
prif, *chief.*
prin, *hardly.*
pris, *price.*
profedigaeth, *temptation.*
proffwyd, *prophet.*
Protestant, *Protestant.*
pryd, *time.*
pryd, pa bryd, *When ?*
prydferth, *beautiful.*
prynu, *to buy.*
punt, *pound.*
pur, yn burach, *pure, purer.*
pwll, *pit.*
pwnc, *subject, point.*
pwrcasu, *to purchase.*
pysgodyn, *fish.*

R

Rhad, yn rhad, *cheap, cheaply.*
rhag, *lest.*
rhai, *some.*
rhaid, *it must ;* rhaid yw, *there is necessity.*
rhagor o, *more of.*
rhan, *lot, phase, division.*
rhedeg, *to run.*
rheswm, *reason.*
rhieni, *parents.*
rhiw, *slope, hill.*
rhodd, *gift.*
rhoddi, *to give, to put.*
rhy, *too.*
rhyddhau, *to release.*
rhyddid, *liberty.*
rhyngoch, *between you.*
rhywbeth, *something.*
rhywrai ffol, *some foolish ones.*
rhywun, *some one.*

S

Saesneg, *English Language.*
safle, *position.*
Sais, Saesnes, *Englishman, Eng-lishwoman.*
sant, *saint.*
sefyll, *to stand.*
seren, *star.*
siarad, *to speak, to talk.*
sôn, *talk, mention.*
stori, *story.*
sydd, *is ;* sydd gennych, *you have.*
syniad, *thought.*
syrthio, *to fall.*

T

Tad, *father.*
tal, *tall.*
talm, *space of time ;* er ys talm, *long ago.*
tan, *fire.*
tàn, *until, under.*
tarddiad, *source.*
tebyg, yn debyg, *like.*
teithio, *to travel.*
teulu, *family.*
tew, *thick, fat.*
ti, *thou.*
tir, *land, earth.*
tlawd, *poor.*
tlws, *pretty, pleasant.*
torri, *to break.*
traethu, *to relate, to tell.*
trechu, *to defeat.*
tref, *town.*
trennydd, *the day after to-morrow.*
treulio, *to spend.*
tro, *time, turn, walk.*
troed, *foot.*
troi, *to turn.*
tros, *over ;* drosodd, *over ;* tros y bwrdd, *overboard.*
troseddu, *to transgress.*
trwm, *heavy.*
trwy, *through, during.*
tua, tuag, *towards.*
tu ol i, *behind.*
tŷ, *house.*

tybio, *to suppose, to consider.*
tyred, *come.*
Tywi, *river Towy.*
tywydd, *weather.*
tywyll, *dark.*
tywyllwch, *darkness.*
tywysog, *prince.*

U

Uchaf, *highest.*
uchel, *high ;* yn bur uchel, *rather high.*
ugain, *twenty, score.*
un, *one, any one, same.*
union, *rightful.*
unwaith, *once.*

W

Wele, *behold, see.*
weithiau, *sometimes.*
wrth, *by, at, compared with.*
wrthyf, *to me.*
wy, *egg.*
wylo, *to weep.*
wythnos, *week.*

Y

Y, *The.*
ych, *ox.*
ychydig, *little.*
ydys, *it is.*
y fath, *such.*
yfory, *to-morrow.*
yma, *here.*
ymadael, *to leave.*
ymaith, *away.*
y mae, *he, she, or it is.*
ymarfer, *to examine oneself.*
ymchwil, *search.*
ymdeimlo a, *to be disposed to.*
ymddengys, *it seems.*
ymddiddan, *to talk, converse with.*
ymddwyn, *to behave, to act.*

ymffrostio, *to boast, to pride oneself.*
ymgryfhau, *to strengthen oneself.*
ymgrymu, *to bow oneself.*
ymguddio, *to hide oneself.*
ymha le, *where.*
ymhen, *at the end.*
ymladd, *to fight.*
ymlidio, *to pursue.*
ymofyn, *to search, make inquiry.*
ymolchi, *to wash oneself.*
ymweled, *to visit.*
yn, *in.*
yna, *then, there.*
yn agos, *near.*
yn awr, *now.*
yn bendant, *definitely.*
yn drwm, *heavily.*
yn dda, *well.*
yn ddiwyd, *diligently.*
ynddo, *in it.*
yn egnïol, *energetically.*
yn felus, *sweetly.*
yn fore, *early.*
yn fuan, *soon.*
yn gynt, *sooner.*
yn gywir, *correctly.*
yng Nghymru, *in Wales.*
y naill, *the one.*
yno, *there.*
yn ol, *ago.*
yn sicr, *surely, certainly.*
yn sych, *dry.*
ynte, *or.*
yn unig, *only.*
yn wahanol, *differently.*
yn well, *better.*
yn ystod, *during.*
y rhai hyn, *these.*
yr hwn, *who, he who.*
yr un, *the same.*
ysbryd, *spirit.*
ysgol, *school.*
ysgrifennu, *to write.*
ystenaid, *pitcher.*
ystraeon, *tales.*
ystyried, *to consider.*

VOCABULARY

II. ENGLISH INTO WELSH

A

Able, *abl ;* to be able, *medru* or
   gallu.
about, *am ;* about to, *ar fedr.*
acknowledge (to), *cydnabod.*
act, action, *gweithred ;* to act,
   ymddwyn.
address, *cyfeiriad.*
admire (to), *edmygu.*
advice, *cyngor.*
afar, *pell ;* from afar, *o bell.*
affair, *helynt.*
after, *ar ol.*
again, *drachefn, eto.*
age, *oed.*
ago, *yn ol.*
all, *pawb, cwbl, holl ;* at all, *o gwbl.*
Alexander, *Alecsander.*
almost, *bron.*
already, *eisoes.*
also, *hefyd.*
alternately, *bob yn ail.*
although, *er.*
always, *bob amser, o hyd.*
another, *arall.*
answer (to), *ateb.*
anthem, *anthem.*
any one, *un.*
appreciate (to), *gwerthfawrogi.*
are. (they), *y maent.*
arise (to), *cyfodi.*
as, *a, ag ; cyn, fel.*
ask (to), *gofyn.*
ass, *asyn* (m.), *asen* (f.).
at once, *ar unwaith ;* at last, *o'r
   diwedd.*

August, *Awst.*
aunt, *modryb.*
author, *awdwr.*
away, *ymaith.*

B

Bala, *Y Bala.*
bare, *llwm.*
be (to), *bod ;* he *may* be, *bo.*
bear (to), *dwyn, goddef.*
beautiful, *hardd, prydferth.*
because, *canys, oblegid.*
become (to), *dyfod.*
before, *o'r blaen, cyn ;* before **a**
   month is gone, *cyn pen mis.*
beg (to), *cardota.*
begin (to), *dechreu.*
behalf (on his), *drosto.*
behave (to), *ymddwyn.*
behind, *ar ol, tu ol i.*
behold, *dyma, wele.*
believe (to), *credu, coelio.*
benefit, *daioni.*
beseech (to), *atolygu.*
besides, *heibio.*
better, best, *gwell, goreu, yn
   oreu ;* better than, *yn well na.*
between, *rhwng.*
birds, *adar.*
black, *du.*
boast (to), *ymffrostio.*
body, *corff.*
book, *llyfr.*
bookcase, *llyfrgell.*
born (to be), *geni.*
bow oneself (to), *ymgrymu.*

boy, *bachgen*.
brave, *dewr*.
bread, *bara*.
break (to), *torri*.
breast, *bron*.
bring (to), *dwyn, cyrchu*.
broad, *llydan*.
brook, *nant*.
brother, *brawd*.
buildings, *adeiladau*.
bury (to), *claddu*.
burning, *llosgi*.
but, *ond*.
buy (to), *prynnu*.
by, *heibio ; gan, wrth, at ;* by and
by, *yn y man*.
by night, *liw nos*.

C

Call (to), *galw*.
cannot (I), *nis gallaf ;* I can,
gallaf.
Cardiff, *Caerdydd*.
care, *gofal*.
castle, *castell*.
cat, *cath*.
catch (to), *dal*.
cattle, cows, *gwartheg*.
cause, *achos ;* to cause, *peri*.
certain, *diau ;* certainly, *yn sicr*.
chapter, *pennod*.
cheap, *rhad*.
cheek, *grudd ;* cheeks, *deurudd*.
Chester, *Caer*.
chief, *prif*.
children, *plant*.
choose (to), *dewis*.
Christmas, *Nadolig*.
church, *eglwys*.
class, *dosbarth*.
clever, *galluog*.
cling (to), *glynu*.
cock, *ceiliog*.
cold, *oer ;* to grow cold, *oerii*.
come (to), *dyfod ;* come thou,
tyred ; come across, *dod o hydi*.
command (to), *gorchymyn*.
compel (to), *gorfodi*.

condemn (to), *condemnio*.
confess (to), *cyffesu*.
conquest, *concwest ;* conquering,
gorchfygu.
consider (to), *tybio, ystyried*.
continue (to), *parhau ;* continu-
ally, *o hyd*.
converse with (to), *ymddiddan a*.
correctly, *yn gywir*.
could (he), *medrai*.
country, *gwlad*.
covenant, *cyfamod*.
cow, *buwch*.
criticise (to), *beirniadu*.
crow, *bran*.
crown, *coron*.
cruelty, *creulondeb*.
cry, *llef ;* to cry, *llefain*.

D

Daily, *bob dydd, beunyddiol,
beunydd*.
dark, *tywyll*.
darkness, *tywyllwch*.
daughter, *merch*.
David, *Dafydd*.
day, *dydd*.
day before yesterday, *echdoe ;*
night before last, *echnos*.
dear, *anwyl*.
death, *angau*.
debate, *dadl*.
Dee, *Y Ddyfrdwy*.
deep, *dwfn*.
defeat (to), *gorchfygu, trechu*.
definitely, *yn bendant*.
deny (to), *gwadu*.
descend (to), *hannu*.
desire, *dymuniad,* to desire,
chwenychu.
devour (to), *llarpio*.
die (to), *marw ;* when he died,
pan fu farw.
differently, *yn wahanol*.
difficult, *anhawdd ;* however diffi-
cult, *pa mor anhawdd bynnag*.
dig (to), *cloddio*.

diligently, *yn ddiwyd.*
dinner hour, *awr ginio.*
dirty, *brwnt.*
discuss (to), *dadleu.*
disease, *dolur.*
disposed (to be), *ymdeimlo â.*
divine, *dwyfol.*
division, *rhan.*
do (to), *gwneud ;* do not (Imper.) *peidiwch.*
doctors, *meddygon.*
dog, *ci.*
door, *drws.*
doubt (to), *ameu.*
down, *lawr ;* downwards, *i lawr.*
drown (to), *boddi.*
dry, *yn sych.*
during, *trwy, yn ystod.*
dwell (to), *lletya.*

E

Eagle, *eryr.*
early, *yn fore.*
earth, *tir.*
easier, *haws, yn haws.*
east, *dwyrain.*
Easter, *Pasc.*
edge, *dibyn.*
education, *addysg.*
egg, *wy.*
Egypt, *Yr Aifft.*
elder, *hynafgwr.*
end, edge, *cwr, glân, diwedd.*
end (to), *gorffen ;* it shall end, *darffo ;* at the end, *ymhen.*
enemy, *gelyn.*
energetic, *diwyd ;* energetically, *yn egniol.*
England, *Lloegr.*
English language, *Saesneg.*
Englishman, *Sais.*
Englishwoman, *Saesnes.*
enough, *digon.*
enter (to), *myned i fewn.*
err (to), *gwneud camsyniad.*
escape (to), *dianc.*
Ethiopian, *Ethiop.*
evening, *hwyr.*

every, *pob ;* every day, *bob dydd.*
exercise oneself (to), *ymarfer.*
expect (to), *disgwyl.*
expensive, *drud.*
eye, *llygad.*

F

Fail (to), *methu.*
faint (to), *diffygio.*
fair, *ffair ; hyfryd, hardd.*
faithful, *cywir.*
falling, *disgyn ;* to fall, *syrthio.*
family, *teulu.*
far, *pell.*
farm, *fferm.*
fat, *tew.*
father, *t..d.*
fear (to), *ofni.*
feather, *pluen.*
fellow-students, *cyd-efrydwyr.*
fetch (to), *cyrchu.*
field, *cae.*
fiercely, *yn ffyrnig.*
fig tree, *ffigysbren.*
fight (to), *ymladd.*
find (to), *cael ;* I found, *cefais.*
finger, *bys.*
finish (to), *darfod.*
fire, *tân.*
first, *cyntaf.*
fish, *pysgod.*
flowers, *blodau.*
foe, *gelyn.*
follow, *dilyn.*
fond, *hoff.*
food, *bwyd.*
foolish, *ffol.*
foot, *troed.*
for, *am, canys ;* for him, *am dano, drosto.*
for the sake of, *er mwyn.*
forbid (God), *na ato Duw.*
force (to), *gorfodi.*
forgive (to), *maddeu.*
formerly, *gynt.*
forth, *ymlaen ;* from this time forth, *o hyn allan.*
friend, *cyfaill, cyfeilles.*

frequent (to), *mynychu.*
frequently, *yn fynych.*
from, *oddiwrth.*
furniture, *dodrefn.*

G

Garden, *gardd.*
gate, *porth.*
get on (to), *llwyddo.*
gift, *rhodd.*
give (to), *rhoddi ;* Imper. *moes, dyro.*
gloves, *menyg.*
go (to), *myned ;* I will go, *af ;* go thou, *dos.*
God, *Duw ;* God forbid, *na ato Duw.*
good, *da.*
grave, *bedd.*
graze (to), *pori.*
great, *mawr ;* greatest, *mwyaf.*
green, *gwyrdd.*

H

Hail ; *henffych.*
hand, *llaw ;* two hands, *dwylaw.*
hardly, *prin.*
hastily, *yn frysiog ;* to hasten, *brysio.*
have (to), *cael ;* let him have, *caffed.*
hay, *gwair.*
head, *pen.*
hear (to), *gwrando, clywed.*
healthy, *iach, iachus.*
heaven, *nefoedd.*
heavy, *trwm ;* heavily, *yn drwm.*
hen, *iar.*
here, *yma ;* here is, *dyma.*
heroism, *gwrhydri.*
hers, *ei heiddo hi.*
hide oneself (to), *ymguddio.*
hidden, *cuddiedig.*
high, *uchel ;* rather high, *yn bur uchel.*
hill, *bryn, rhiw.*
his, her, *ei.*

holidays, *gwyliau.*
home, *cartref ;* at home, *gartref ;* from home, *oddicartref.*
homewards, *adref.*
honesty, *gonestrwydd.*
honour (to), *anrhydeddu.*
hope, *gobaith ;* to hope, *gobeithio.*
horse, *ceffyl.*
hour, *awr.*
house, *tŷ.*
however, *er.*
human, *dynol.*
hundred, *cant, càn.*
husband, *gwr.*
hymn, *emyn.*

I

If, *os ;* if not, *oni, pe.*
Immanuel, *Emanuel.*
improve (to), *gwella.*
in, *mewn, i, yn ;* in Wales, *Yng Nghymru.*
interesting, *difyr.*
into, *i.*
Ireland, *Iwerddon.*
Irish Sea, *Môr Iwerddon.*
is (there), *y mae, sydd ;* it is, *ydys.*
it, *ef ;* it is I, *myfi yw.*
Italy, *yr Eidal.*

J

Jesus, *Iesu.*
Jews, *Iuddewon.*
judge (to), *barnu.*

K

Keep (to), *cadw.*
kill (to), *lladd ;* He who kills shall be killed, *A laddo a leddir.*
king, *brenin.*
knife, *cyllell.*
know (to), *gwybod ;* is known, *adwaenir.*

L

Labour (to), *llafurio.*
lamb, *oen.*

lame, *cloff*.
land, *tir*.
language, *iaith*.
large, *mawr*.
last, lastly, *olaf, yn olaf*.
last year, *llynedd*.
last night, *neithiwr*.
late, *yn hwyr, diweddar* ; latest,
    diweddaraf.
law, *cyfraith*.
leaf, *dalen, deilen*.
leave (to), *gadael, ymadael*.
leisurely, *hamddenol*.
less, *llai*.
lesson, *gwers*.
lest, *rhag*.
let (Imper.), *gad*.
letter, *llythyr*.
liberty, *rhyddid*.
library, *llyfrgell*.
life, *bywyd*.
lifetime, *oes*.
like (to), *hoffi* ; like, *tebyg*.
likely, *yn debyg*.
lion, *llew*.
listen (to), *gwrando*.
little, *ychydig*.
live (to), *byw* ; used to live,
    cartrefai.
load (to), *llwytho*.
loan, *benthyg*.
London, *Llundain*.
long, *hir, yn hir* ; ere long, *cyn
    hir*.
look (to), *edrych, disgwyl*.
Lord, *Arglwydd*.
lose (to), *colli*.
lot, *rhan*.
love, *cariad* ; to love, *caru*.

M

Maid, *morwyn*.
make (to), *gwneud*.
man, *gwr, dyn* ; old man, *hynafgwr*.
manna, *manna*.
many, *amryw, llawer*.
mare, *caseg*.
market, *marchnad*.

master, *meistr*.
May, *Mai*.
meadow, *dôl*.
meantime, *cyfamser*.
meet (to), *cwrdd, cyfarfod*.
mention, *sôn*.
middle, *canol*.
mile, *milltir*.
miserable, *diflas*.
mistake, *camsyniad*.
mixed, *cymysg*.
mode, *modd*.
money, *arian*.
month, *mis* ; before a month is
    gone, *cyn pen mis*.
more, *mwy, rhagor o*.
morning, *bore*.
mother, *mam*.
mountain, *mynydd*.
mow hay (to), *lladd gwair*.
much, *llawer* ; as much, *cymaint* ;
    too much, *gormod*.
muscle, *gewyn*.
must, *rhaid, gormod*.
my, *fy* ; my own, *fy hun*.

N

Name, *enw*.
narrow, *cul*.
Nazareth, *Nasareth*.
near, *agos, gerllaw*.
necessary, *angenrheidiol*.
necessity (there is), *rhaid yw*.
negligence, *esgeulusdod*.
neighbour, *cymydog*.
nest, *nyth*.
never, *ni—erioed* ; *ni—byth*.
new, *newydd*.
news, *newyddion*.
Newtown, *Y Drefnewydd*.
next, *nesaf*.
night, *nos* ; by night, *liw nos* ;
    last night, *neithiwr*.
nine o'clock, *naw o'r gloch*.
no, *na* ; no, they are not, *nac
    ydynt* ; no, there is not, *nac oes
    ddim*.
none of, *mo'r*.

North Wales, *Gwynedd.*
not, *ni, nid.*
nothing, *dim.*
now, *yn awr.*
nutting, *cneua.*

O

Oak, *derw.*
of, *am.*
offended (to be), *digio.*
offer (to have an), *cael cynnyg.*
often, *aml, yn aml, mynych.*
Oh that ! *O na !*
old, *hen.*
on, *ar ;* on me, *arnaf.*
once, *unwaith.*
one, *un.*
one by one, *bob yn un ac un.*
one another, *eu gilydd.*
only, *yn unig.*
opinion, *barn.*
or, *neu, ynte.*
other, *arall ;* others, *ereill.*
our, *ein.*
out, *allan ;* out of me, *o honof.*
over, *trosodd, tros ;* overboard, *tros y bwrdd.*
overtake (to), *goddiweddu.*
own (to), *piau.*
owner, *meddiannydd.*
ox, *ych.*

P

Palace, *palas.*
paper, *papur.*
Paradise, *paradwys.*
parents, *rhieni.*
part, *adran.*
path, *llwybr.*
patience, *amynedd.*
peace, *heddwch.*
people, *pobl.*
perceive (to), *canfod.*
perfect, *perffaith.*
perhaps, *hwyrach.*
phase, *rhan, agwedd.*
pit, *pwll.*

pitcher, *ysten ;* pitcherful, *ystenaid.*
place, *lle ;* where, *pa le ?* to place, *gosod.*
plague, *pla.*
play (to), *chwareu.*
pocket, *llogell.*
poetry, *barddoniaeth.*
point, *pwnc.*
poor, *gwael, tlawd ;* rather poor, *pur wael.*
position, *safle.*
possess (to), *meddiannu.*
possible (it is), *dichon.*
pound, *punt.*
praise (to), *canmol.*
pray (to), *gweddio ;* I pray, *atolwg.*
preacher, *pregethwr.*
prefer (I), *gwell yw gennyf.*
pretty, *hardd, tlws.*
price, *pris.*
pride oneself (to), *ymffrostio.*
prince, *tywysog.*
print (to), *argraffu.*
privilege, *braint.*
prize, *gwobr.*
probably, *hwyrach.*
progress, *llwyddiant.*
promise, *addewid.*
prophet, *proffwyd.*
Protestant, *Protestant.*
punish (to), *cospi*
purchase (to), *pwrcasu*
pure, *pur.*
pursue (to), *ymlid.*
push (to), *gwthio.*
put (to), *rhoddi.*

Q

Queen, *brenhines.*
quick, *cyflym.*

R

Rabbit, *cwningen.*
rain, *gwlaw.*
ram, *hwrdd.*
reach (to), *cyrraedd.*

read (to), *darllen.*
ready, *parod, yn barod.*
reason, *rheswm.*
receive (to), *cael, derbyn.*
recommend (to), *cymeradwyo.*
red, *coch.*
relate (to), *traethu.*
release (to), *rhyddhau.*
remain (to), *aros.*
remember (to), *cofio.*
representative, *cynrychiolydd.*
request, *cais.*
respect, *parch.*
rest (to), *gorffwys.*
responsibility, *cyfrifoldeb.*
return (to), *dychwelyd.*
reward, *gwobr;* to reward, *gwobrwyo.*
riches, *cyfoeth;* rich, *cyfoethog.*
righteous, *cyfiawn.*
rightful, *union.*
risk (to), *mentro.*
river, *afon.*
road, *ffordd.*
rock, *craig.*
rose (red) (lit. foxglove), *ffuon.*
royal, *brenhinol.*
run (to), *rhedeg.*

S

Saint, *sant.*
same, *yr un.*
satisfy, *boddloni.*
save (to), *achub;* saved, *cadwedig.*
say (to), *dywedyd;* he says, *medd ef;* he said, *eb efe, dywed.*
scene, *golygfa.*
school, *ysgol.*
scientific, *gwyddonol.*
score, *ugain.*
sea, *môr.*
search (to), *chwilio, ymofyn.*
second, *ail.*
see (to), *canfod, gweled.*
see yonder, *dacw;* see here, *dyma, wele.*
seek (to), *ceisio.*
sell (to), *gwerthu.*

self, *hun, hunan.*
seem (to), *ymddangos.*
send (to), *danfon.*
servant, *gwas.*
set (to), *gwneud, parodd.*
Severn, *Hafren.*
shall (we), *cawn.*
shameful, *cywilyddus.*
sheep, *dafad, defaid.*
ship, *llong.*
should (he), *dylai.*
shout (to), *bloeddio.*
show (to), *dangos.*
Shrewsbury, *Amwythig.*
side, *glân;* sea-side, *glan y môr, ochr.*
sight, *golwg.*
since, *er pan, gan.*
sing (to), *canu;* singing-practice, *cyfarfod canu.*
sinner, *pechadur.*
sister, *chwaer.*
sit (to), *eistedd.*
skin, *croen.*
sleep (to), *cysgu.*
slip (may), *llithro.*
slope, *rhiw.*
slow, *araf.*
small, *bach, mân.*
snow, *eira;* to snow, *bwrw eira.*
so, *mor;* so that, *fel, felly.*
soldier, *milwr.*
some, *rhywrai;* some one, *rhywun;* something, *rhywbeth.*
sometimes, *weithiau.*
son, *mab.*
song, *cân;* songs, *caneuon, caniadau.*
soon, *buan, yn fuan, cyn hir;* sooner, *yn gynt;* as soon as, *gynted.*
source, *tarddiad.*
space of time, *talm.*
speak (to), *siarad.*
spend (to), *treulio.*
spirit, *ysbryd.*
stand (to), *sefyll.*
star, *seren.*
start (to), *cychwyn.*

stay (to), *aros ;* stayed, *arhosodd.*
steal (to), *lladrata.*
stick, *ffon.*
still, *eto.*
stone, *carreg.*
story, *stori.*
strange, *dieithr ;* stranger, *dieithr-ddyn.*
straw, *gwellt.*
strengthen oneself (to), *ymgryfhau.*
strong, *cryf, cadarn.*
subject, *pwnc.*
succeed (to), *llwyddo.*
such, *y fath.*
summer, *haf.*
surely, *yn sicr.*
sweet, *melus :* sweetly, *yn felus.*
swim (to), *nofio.*

T

Take (to), *dwyn ;* take (Imper.), *hwde, cymerwch, dewiswch.*
tales, *ystraeon.*
talk, *son, ymddiddan ;* to talk, *siarad.*
tall, *tâl.*
task, *camp.*
teach (to), *dysgu.*
teacher, *athraw.*
tell (to), *dywedyd, traethu.*
temptation, *profedigaeth.*
ten thousand, *myrddiwn.*
than *na, nag.*
thank (to), *diolch.*
that (conj.), *mai.*
that, *hwn yna ;* that yonder, *hwn acw.*
the, *y, yr ;* the + superl. The more the merrier, *Goreu po fwyaf ;* The one the other, *Y naill y llall.*
their, *eu.*
themselves, *eu hunain.*
then, *yna.*
there, *yna, yno.*
these, *y rhai hyn ;* these are, *dyma.*
thick, *tew.*

thief, *lleidr.*
thing, *peth ;* such a thing, *peth felly.*
think (to), *meddwl, tybio.*
this, *hwn, hon, hyn ;* this here, *hwn yma.*
those, *hynny.*
thought, *syniad.*
thousand, *mil.*
through, *trwy.*
thus, *felly.*
till, *hyd oni.*
time, *amser, pryd ; gwaith,* as in *unwaith.*
tire (to), *blino.*
to, *ar, i ;* to him, *ato, iddo.*
to-day, *heddyw.*
to-morrow, *yfory ;* day after to-morrow, *trennydd.*
too, *rhy.*
tooth, *dant, daint.*
towards, *tuag.*
town, *tref.*
Towy, *Tywi.*
tradesman, *masnachwr.*
transgress (to), *troseddu.*
travel (to), *teithio.*
tree, *coeden ;* trunk of a tree, *cyff.*
tremble (to), *crynnu.*
tribes, *llwythau.*
trouble (to), *blino.*
true, *cywir, gwir ;* truth, *gwir.*
turn, *tro ;* to turn, *troi.*
twelve, *deuddeg.*
two, *dau ;* two days, *deuddydd.*

U

Under, *tan.*
understand (to), *deall.*
undoubtedly, *yn ddiau.*
uncle, *ewythr.*
unless, *oni.*
until, *nes, hyd oni, hyd nes, tân.*
unto, *i.*
upon, *ar ;* upon it, *arno.*
upwards, *fyny, i fyny.*
use (to), *defnyddio.*
usually, *mynychaf.*

V

Valley, *dyffryn.*
valuable, *gwerthfawr.*
value, *gwerth.*
venture (to), *mentro.*
verse, *adnod.*
very, *iawn,* cp. *mawr iawn.*
victory, *concwest.*
village, *pentref.*
visit (to), *ymweled.*
voice, *llais.*

W

Wait (to), *aros.*
Wales, *Cymru ;* Wales of the past, *Cymru Fu.*
walk (to), *cerdded ;* a walk, *tro.*
warm, *cynnes.*
was, *oedd.*
wash oneself (to), *ymolchi.*
water, *dwfr.*
way, *modd, ffordd.*
we, *ni.*
wear (to), *gwisgo.*
weather, *tywydd.*
week, *wythnos.*
weep (to), *wylo.*
well, *yn dda ;* very well, *o'r goreu.*
Welsh, *Cymraeg ;* Welshman, *Cymro ;* Welshwoman, *Cymraes.*
went (he), *aeth.*
wet, *gwlyb.*
what ? *beth ? pa beth ?* whatever, *pa beth bynnag.*
when, *pan, pa bryd ?* whenever, *pa bryd bynnag.*

wherever, *lle bynnag, pa le bynnag ?* where ? *ymha le ?*
white, *gwyn ;* as white as, *cyn wynned â.*
whoever, *yr hwn, y neb, y sawl.*
whosoever, *pwy bynnag.*
whole, *cwbl, holl.*
whose, *eiddo pwy ?*
why, *paham ?*
wide, *llydan.*
wife, *gwraig.*
wilderness, *anialwch.*
will, *ewyllys ;* willing, *boddlon.*
will (to), *mynnu.*
win (to), *ennill.*
window, *ffenestr.*
wise, *doeth.*
wish (to), *dewis.*
with, *gyda, gan.*
without, *heb ;* within, *i fewn.*
woman, *dynes, gwraig.*
word, *gair ;* word for word, *gair am air.*
work (to), *gweithio, llafurio.*
world, *byd.*
would that, *O na !*
write (to), *ysgrifennu.*

Y

Yard, *llath, llathen.*
year, *blwyddyn, blwydd, blynedd ;* last year, *y llynedd ;* this year, *eleni.*
yellow, *melyn.*
yes, *ie, do, oes.*
yesterday, *doe.*
yonder, *acw.*
young, *ieuanc.*
your, *eich.*

Parallel Grammar Series.

"*Almost every grammatical system has its 'rationale,' capable of being comprehended by the mind, if the mind is kept steadily to it, and of serving as a clue to the facts; but . . . every one of the grammars following a different system, the student masters the rationale of none of them; and in consequence, after all his labour, he often ends by possessing of the science of grammar nothing but a heap of terms jumbled together in inextricable confusion.*"—MATTHEW ARNOLD.

Uniformity of Terminology and Uniformity of Classification are the distinguishing marks of this series; all the Grammars are constructed on the same plan, and the same terminology is used to describe identical grammatical features in different languages. The terminology employed is such as to command general acceptance, having been accepted and approved by the *Grammatical Society*—a society which was formed in 1886 for the express purpose of drawing up a scheme suitable for use in teaching different languages side by side, and which numbered among its members many eminent teachers from all parts of the United Kingdom and America. The principle of selection is that *the existing stock of grammatical terms is sufficient for its purpose, if used economically*; and the editor has been able to carry out his scheme without the introduction of new or unfamiliar terms. Those who are acquainted with the chaos which has hitherto reigned, and the bewilderment which is caused to pupils by the gratuitous use of two or three different terms where one would suffice, will appreciate the labour which has been devoted to the simplification of terminology in the series. But the editor and his collaborateurs have not limited themselves to a reform of terminology. Far more than this has been done. The whole classification of the facts of language for the purposes of Syntax has been rendered more scientific, and at the same time more intelligible, by the adoption of a common point of view; and much attention has been given to the concise and accurate statement of rules, and to the exclusion or subordination of minutiæ that merely burden without enlightening the pupil.

The principle of Uniformity in Grammar, first carried out in the *Parallel Grammar Series*, has been formally approved and adopted by so high an authority as the German Ministry of Education (*Lehrpläne und Lehraufgaben*, Easter, 1892): its soundness, both

scientific and practical, may therefore be regarded as thoroughly established. The progress of the idea on the Continent is fully set forth in an article by DR. HORNEMANN in Rein's *Encyclopädisches Handbuch der Pädagogik* (1898, vol. v., p. 232, ff.), where the movement is associated with the names of VOGT, EICHNER, WALDECK, MANGOLD, HARRE, VOLLBRECHT, HEIL and SCHMIDT, SEEGER, BANNER and REINHARDT. The two last named have produced parallel syntaxes of French and Latin (1895 and 1896) for the "Reform-gymnasium" at Frankfort. Holland has now its parallel grammars of Greek and Latin by Dr. H. WOLTJER (1892 and 1894); France its *Grammaire Comparée du Grec et du Latin* by Dr. O. RIEMANN and Dr. H. GOELZER. But at present **England is the only country which possesses a complete series of grammars in which these principles are carried out.**

The Grammars are accompanied by a series of **READERS AND WRITERS**, each in a single volume, based on the following principles :—

1. The *Reader* is the centre of instruction. Each passage in it is designed (i.) to have a unity and interest of its own, sufficient to engage the attention of the pupil; (ii.) to exhibit, so far as circumstances permit, one dominant grammatical feature. Forms which cannot be understood grammatically without more knowledge than the pupil possesses at a particular stage are not altogether excluded, but they are treated as isolated words, and are simply translated (without grammatical explanation) in the Vocabulary or Preparations.

The *Reader* thus lends itself to the methodical learning and practising of grammar. Grammatical facts presented in concrete form in an interesting context are easily understood and remembered, and form the basis of that more complete and systematic knowledge which can only be acquired from a Grammar.

2. The *Writer* is based upon the subject matter and vocabulary of the *Reader*, and gives systematic practice in the dominant grammatical feature under consideration. The pupil is early introduced to the writing of *continuous passages ;* these are at first built up out of separate sentences of easy construction, but gradually assume the character of connected prose in the proper sense of the term. No meaningless sentences or fragments of sentences are employed.

Reading, Writing and Grammar thus go hand in hand, and the knowledge acquired in each department is immediately utilised in the others. In this point, too, the system worked out by the Editor and his collaborateurs coincides in all its essential features with the best results of foreign experience.

3. The courses are so arranged as to present to the pupil the *important* before the *unimportant*, the less difficult before the more

difficult. Grammatical details are reserved until the main outline of grammar has been mastered.

4. The terminology and classifications of the *Parallel Grammars* are employed throughout the *Readers* and *Writers*.

The method briefly indicated above is here applied to all the languages ordinarily taught in schools, the teaching which may thus be organised and concentrated on a unifor... basis.

☞ For list of the Grammars and Readers in the Series see pp. 7-15.

SELECT OPINIONS ON THE SERIES AS A WHOLE.

"One of the most pressing needs of the day, in view of the multiplication of school subjects and the increased strain which it puts upon the pupil, is concentration and simplification in the methods of teaching. What we have lost in extension we must gain in intention, as the logicians would say. And among the attempts which are being made to meet this demand, a high place must be accorded to the movement started in this country some years ago for unification in the field of grammar teaching. Grammars are many, but grammar is one; that is to say, though the varieties of usage in different languages are infinitely numerous, it is possible to treat them from a common point of view—to classify them on the basis of a common scheme of analysis and terminology. The gain to the teacher ought to be enormous. Instead of re-classifying the facts of syntax for each separate language according to the sweet will of the framers of individual grammars, a single classification serves for all the languages to be learned; and this scheme, by repetition in connexion with each new language studied, becomes part and parcel of the mental outfit of the pupil—a solid rock on which he stands firm in face of the bewildering complexities of human speech. The old method involved a continual re-adjustment of the register; and its evils were many, as Matthew Arnold recognized. In our own time a serious attempt has been made to remedy its defects in Professor Sonnenschein's *Parallel Grammar Series*."—*Literature,* 10th Feb., 1900.

"We have for some years been using the *Parallel Grammars* and *Readers and Writers* intended to be studied along with them. We were led to introduce these text-books from a sense of the soundness of the educational principles on which they were based; experience has now taught us to value them also for the care and consistency with which these principles are carried out. We are convinced that it is an incalculable gain to the cause of systematic instruction in our school that we are using books which enable us to

preserve uniformity in the grammar teaching of the languages, as well as to connect coherently translation and composition with this grammar teaching."—The Rev. A. JAMSON SMITH, M.A., Headmaster of K.E.S., Camp Hill, Birmingham.

" The *Parallel Grammars*, English, Latin, Greek, French and German, have been used without interruption in this school, each from the time of its publication.   These grammars are acknowledged to be in the front rank as regards scholarship, and they have also the merits of clearness and compactness.   The Parallel Method is important as leading to a real grasp of principles and economizing the learner's time.   The result of using the *Parallel Grammars* exclusively has in the case of this school been altogether satisfactory, and where pupils of linguistic talent were concerned, admirably successful."—EDITH HASTINGS, Headmistress of the Wimbledon High School for Girls.

" After recommending the *Parallel Grammar Series* in many quarters, I cannot remember any one who was disappointed, or to whom the working out of the same system through various languages did not come as something of a revelation, for which they were intensely grateful.   I am sure that no teacher who had once tried the effect of their arrangement of *Conditional Sentences* as against the traditional arrangement could be blind to the superiority of the former."—W. H. SECKER, M.A., Oxon., Aysgarth School, Yorkshire.

" There can be no doubt that this system, if it can be satisfactorily carried out, will save much time to the teacher and much perplexity to the pupil."—P. GILES, M.A., Fellow and Lecturer of Emmanuel College, and Reader in Comparative Philology in the University of Cambridge (*Classical Review*).

" This attempt deserves all encouragement.   It marks a new departure, and is a real advance.   Any one of these grammars may be used separately by student or teacher.   They may be used with still greater advantage in combination."—The late H. NETTLESHIP, Corpus Professor of Latin in the University of Oxford.

" The recognition of the fact that the fundamental principles of grammar are common to all languages constitutes a conspicuous merit of Sonnenschein's *Parallel Grammar Series*."—Professor FREDERIC SPENCER, in his *Chapters on the Aims and Practice of Teaching* (p. 88).

" I welcome the new series of *Parallel Grammars* as a real advance in the direction of clear thought, brevity, so far as brevity is possible, and riddance of that superfluous naughtiness which refuses to call the same things by the same names."—C. COLBECK, M.A., Assistant Master at Harrow (*Journal of Education*).

"I fully approve of your attempt to introduce something like

harmony into the teaching of ancient and modern languages, and heartily sympathise with the object you have in view."—The late Rev. H. A. HOLDEN, M.A., LL.D., Examiner in London University.

"The series of *Parallel Grammars* is the first attempt to get rid of the perplexities and misunderstandings arising from the inconsistent terminology employed in the grammars of different languages."—The Rev. J. B. MAYOR, Litt.D., late Editor of the *Classical Review*.

"The idea and principles of this series thoroughly commend themselves to me."—F. CHATTERTON RICHARDS, M.A., Fellow of Hertford College, Oxford, late Professor of Greek in University College, Cardiff.

"It is with more than an ordinary sense of appreciation that we notice this really remarkable series of books. The very conception of so novel and difficult an enterprise would in itself be noteworthy. But the conception has been carried out with such signal skill and care, that the result may be said, with no exaggeration, to constitute an epoch in the history of our educational literature. These grammars will, in fact, convert what has been a perplexed wandering through a tangled forest into a secure journey through a well-mapped-out country."—*Birmingham Daily Gazette*.

"The adoption of uniform methods of teaching must result in an enormous saving of time and energy for both teachers and taught."—*Catholic Times*.

"We have had frequent occasion to express our opinion of the various volumes in this very useful series, and of the general features which characterise them all ; their spirit and system are now so well known to all teachers that it is hardly necessary to repeat those observations. The principle of familiarising a pupil with passages for translation before he has mastered many details of grammar, of bringing him to a knowledge of rules through the language from which experience collects them, rather than equipping him with a mass of words and forms long before he meets them in the literature —this principle is gradually growing to be more and more widely acknowledged as a sound one.

"Few can doubt the very great advantage of having some general principles established, which can be illustrated in different languages, either by way of similarity or contrast. It is on this system of proceeding from the known to the unknown that the *Parallel Grammar Series* is based."—*Educational Review*.

FOREIGN OPINIONS ON THE SERIES AS A WHOLE.

"This Series is unique in character, so far as I know. We in Germany have nothing similar. At the Berlin School Conference

(December, 1890) Schiller spoke on the point, maintaining that we ought to have Parallel Grammars, in connexion with the question how instruction might be simplified by improvements in method. The new Prussian Scheme of Instruction of 1891 lays it down that 'in the choice of a Latin Grammar attention should be paid to its being not too different in its whole plan and construction from the Greek Grammar which is to be used side by side with it' (p. 23); and again, 'in the choice of an English and French grammar, care should be taken that they are not too different in their plan and construction, and that the terminology be here the same as in other languages' (p. 37). Though the term 'Parallel Grammars' is not here employed, yet the idea is the same as that which lies at the basis of the admirable *Parallel Grammar Series*, edited by Sonnenschein. It is his merit to have been the first to carry out with brilliant success the principle of simplifying grammatical terminology, and, above all, of employing *the same terminology* in all the languages learned in schools. In my pamphlet called *Solved and Unsolved Problems of Method* (Berlin, Springer, 1892), I declared the question of Parallel Grammars still unsolved for Germany, and assigned to Sonnenschein the credit of having solved it for England. I now repeat what I there said. We in Germany have only to take the English *Parallel Grammar Series* as a model, and to learn from Sonnenschein how to construct a similar series for our own country. He has shown that parallelism involves no revolution in terminology, but, on the contrary, that it is possible to make the old established terms serve the purpose, if they be properly and *economically* used. The whole system is excellent, and may be most warmly recommended to the attention of all those who are interested in the production of a series of Parallel Grammars."—W. MANGOLD, Ph.D., Professor in the Askanisches Gymnasium, Berlin (Translated).

"An organic unity of Grammars, such as Sonnenschein's series, is as yet lacking in Germany, although it would indisputably be of great service."—Dr. J. SITZLER, in *Wochenschrift für Klassische Philologie* (Translated).

"A year ago I expressed my unqualified approval of the *Parallel Grammar Series;* since then my admiration for it has only increased, in proportion as I have more fully understood the principles on which it is based and their application. Mr. Sonnenschein has deserved well of his country in taking the initiative in this work, which he has succeeded in carrying to a happy issue. Shall we ever have a similar series for our own country? That day, the teaching of languages will have taken an immense step forward."—Dr. J. KEELHOF, Professor at the Athénée Royal, Tongres, Belgium, in *Revue de l'instruction publique* (Translated).

GREEK.

GREEK GRAMMAR. By Prof. E. A. Sonnenschein, D.Litt., Oxon., University of Birmingham. *4s. 6d.*; or (separately), *Accidence* (including *Supplement* on irregularities in Declension and Comparison), *2s.*; *Supplement* alone, *6d.*; *Syntax*, *2s. 6d.*

"I hold and have often expressed the opinion, that for Attic Accidence and Syntax yours is absolutely the best school grammar extant."—GILBERT MURRAY, M.A., LL.D., late Professor of Greek in the University of Glasgow.

have found it singularly interesting, admirable in clearness and throwing real light (as it seems to me) on some perplexing points of Syntax."—S. H. BUTCHER, M.A., LL.D., D.Litt., late Professor of Greek in the University of Edinburgh.

"This is far the best Greek Accidence that I have ever had to deal with; the conspectus of the Verbs, each on its own page, is admirable."—The Rev. E. D. STONE, M.A., of Broadstairs, late Assistant Master at Eton College.

"Superior to anything of the kind I have as yet used or seen."—W. G. RUSH-BROOKE, LL.M., Cantab., Headmaster of St. Olave's School, London, S.E.

"Admirably clear in its arrangement, and, at the same time, comprehensive in its scope. All that is unimportant and exceptional is duly subordinated to the typical and normal forms. The work deserves to be extensively used in all English-speaking countries."—J. E. SANDYS, Litt.D., Public Orator in the University of Cambridge.

"Admirable both in design and execution: it ought to have a tremendous circulation."—W. PETERSON, M.A., Oxon., LL.D., Principal of the MacGill University, Montreal.

"Admirably adapted for teaching purposes. The information is presented in a manner at once lucid and exact, and the student who advances to more elaborate works will find that he has nothing to unlearn."—P. GILES, M.A., Fellow and Lecturer of Emmanuel College, and Reader in Comparative Philology in the University of Cambridge.

"Excellent both in plan and execution. It has the advantage of others in being simple, to the point, and running on a broad gauge line that suits all the cognate languages."—J. Y. SARGENT, M.A., late Fellow and Tutor of Magdalen College, Oxford.

"Distinctly the best Greek Grammar I know for daily use. It is wonderful to find so much information contained in a book of such small bulk, and yet presented in an interesting form. It is an admirable piece of work and a constant help to the University teacher."—G. R. SCOTT, M.A., Fellow and Tutor of Merton College, Oxford.

"The *Greek Grammar* (*Accidence and Syntax*) has been in use here for eleven years, and we wish to say that we have found it invaluable as combining the most recent results of research into pure Attic forms with an admirable arrangement for practical teaching. Its method and completeness, we have no hesitation in saying, render it superior to any other Greek Grammar for school purposes. The list of irregular verbs and the appendix on accents have proved especially useful."—F. J. R. HENDY, M.A., Headmaster, W. L. BUNTING, M.A., E. H. FURNESS, M.A., Classical Masters at Bromsgrove School (1904).

"It is just the sort of book I believe in for school use. It groups the essentials in convenient order, without verbiage. It deals with facts. It throws the usual

into strong relief, and subordinates the exceptional. It utilise⁰ the knowledge of grammar already attained by the pupil."—B. I. WHEELER, President of the University of California, U.S.A.

"I find the *Accidence* a marvel of compactness. I am a thorough believer in this method of teaching Greek Grammar to beginners. No wonder Greek studies have to fight their way, when boys are set to learning long lists of exceptions at the outset. The *Syntax* is just the thing that is wanted. I am not a disciple of parallelism as seen in some tables of comparison, where everything is sacrificed to a wooden uniformity; but I am in favour of parallel syntax when you naturally apply what Latin you know to what Greek you are learning to know. You have certainly hit the mean."—H. WEIR SMYTH, Ph.D., Professor of Greek in Harvard University, U.S.A.

"The best book of the kind with which the present reviewer is familiar. . . . Its method is that of the future. The *Accidence* combines completeness and accuracy in such a way as to make it indispensable to teacher and learner alike The *Syntax* marks a new departure from accepted routine: too much praise cannot be bestowed on the method adopted and the excellent manner in which it has been developed in detail. Its framework is a κτῆμα ἐς ἀεί, admitting of improvement without substantial alteration."—The Rev. J. DONOVAN, M.A., late Professor of Classics in Stonyhurst College (*Classical Review*).

"It is no exaggeration to say that the position of this book is quite *unique*. . . . For brevity, lucidity, general accuracy, and consistency of opinion, we know of no book on Greek Syntax in English that can be compared to this. Having used the *Accidence* ourselves for the purpose of practical teaching, we can testify still more strongly to its value. One of its superlative merits is that a student can use it without the aid of a teacher to explain the explanation, and yet, with all this clearness and conciseness, there is a fulness of information which leaves nothing to be desired on any important point."—*Educational Review*.

"Subordination of detail, clearness of outline, brevity and accuracy in rules—of these a surfeit is impossible, and they are well realised. In *Syntax*, induction has superseded deduction: a group of examples followed, not preceded, by the rule is an excellent inversion of the old system."—*Preparatory Schools Review*.

A PARALLEL OF GREEK AND LATIN SYNTAX. By C. H. St. L. RUSSELL, M.A., Assistant Master at Clifton College. 3s. 6d.

"The leading idea of the work is to present, in columns side by side, the idioms of the two tongues. The provision of a chapter on English Syntax is a welcome proof that common sense is at length obtaining vogue in the teaching of the Classics."—*Birmingham Daily Post*.

FIRST GREEK READER AND WRITER. By J. E. SANDYS, Litt.D., Public Orator in the University of Cambridge. 2s. 6d

"A most valuable addition to the series. Our examination enables us to say that the matter of this volume is most judiciously chosen and arranged, the difficulties carefully graduated, and the exercises much more interesting than is usual in such books. We can warmly recommend its accuracy, careful arrangement and admirable simplicity."—*Educational Review*.

"Carefully graduated."— *Guardian*.

"A distinct improvement on the usual style."— *University Correspondence*.

LATIN.

LATIN GRAMMAR. By Prof. E. A. SONNENSCHEIN, D.Litt., Oxon., University of Birmingham. *3s.* ; or (separately), *Accidence, 1s. 6d.* ; *Syntax, 1s. 6d.*

"The *Latin Accidence* of the *Parallel Grammar Series* is in use throughout King Edward's School, Birmingham, and the *Greek Accidence* on the Classical side. I am distinctly of opinion that one and the same *Accidence* should be prescribed in every school for all forms learning the language, and that the *Parallel Grammar Accidences* are the right ones to prescribe. Grammatical curiosities are relegated to their proper place, and the normal inflexions of the languages are presented in a clear and orderly manner without sacrificing practical convenience to the supposed requirements of scientific philology. When the *Greek* and the *Latin Accidence* of this series are used side by side, the further economy effected by the parallel system is realized."—R. CARY GILSON, M.A., Headmaster of the Schools of King Edward VI. in Birmingham, late Assistant Master at Harrow, and Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge.

"It is all that might be expected of so accomplished a scholar."—The late H. NETTLESHIP, Corpus Professor of Latin in the University of Oxford.

"A valuable book. The information is conveyed in language at once terse and lucid ; good judgment has been shown in the selection of matter as well as in its presentment ; and great care has been taken about the terminology—an important point."—J. S. REID, Litt.D., Fellow and Tutor of Gonville and Caius College, Cambridge.

"I consider this *Latin Grammar* excellent, on account both of the lucidity of its arrangement, which makes it easy to learn, and of the soundness of its principles, which ensures that there is nothing to unlearn."—S. G. OWEN, M.A., Censor and Classical Tutor of Christ Church, Oxford.

"The whole book is characterised by admirable simplicity. . . . It would be difficult to imagine a more pleasant task for a teacher than to have an intelligent class before him, with this book in his hands."—*Education.*

"A student brought up upon the set of grammars to which this one belongs could not fail to have fundamental grammatical ideas very clearly and firmly fixed in his mind."—W. G. HALE, Head Professor of Latin in the University of Chicago (*Classical Review*).

"The best Latin Grammar I have seen."—J. MACLEOD, I.S.O., late H.M.I.S., Elgin.

FIRST LATIN READER AND WRITER. By C. M. DIX, M.A., Oxon. *2s.*

"The best of all the elementary books for teaching Latin with which I am acquainted."—The late Rev. R. H. QUICK, M.A.

"May be safely recommended to those who appreciate the importance of not deferring translation till the system of grammar is mastered: it is simple, sound and practical."—*Education.*

SECOND LATIN READER AND WRITER. By C. M. DIX, M.A. *1s. 6d.*

"Makes a very favourable impression, both as a bit of teaching, and as a Latin grammatical work."—*Guardian.*

THIRD LATIN READER AND WRITER. By C. M. DIX, M.A. 2s.

" Carries out the principle of this excellent series with remarkable skill.   The whole book deserves praise for its variety, liveliness, and workable character."— *Educational Review.*

" Admirably constructed."—*Glasgow Herald.*

FOURTH LATIN READER AND WRITER ("LIVY LESSONS"). By J. C. NICOL, M.A., Cantab., late Fellow of Trinity Hall, Headmaster of Portsmouth Grammar School, and the Rev. J. HUNTER SMITH, M.A., Oxon., late Assistant Master in King Edward's School, Birmingham. 2s.

" The selections are good, the notes are useful, and the eighteen pages of ' exercises for translation,' are attractive in subject and style."— *Guardian.*

" Eminently interesting."—*School Board Chronicle.*

ENGLISH.

ENGLISH GRAMMAR. By J. HALL, M.A., Headmaster of the Hulme Grammar School, Manchester ; Miss A. J. COOPER, F.C.P. ; and the EDITOR OF THE SERIES. 2s. ; or (separately), *Accidence*, 1s. ; *Analysis and Syntax*, 1s.

" English appears to lend itself well to the general plan of the series.   Both *Accidence* and *Analysis and Syntax* have been compiled with careful reference to the highest authorities, and arranged in a manner at once logical and attractive." —*Education.*

" Strikingly fresh and clear and sound."—*Educational Times.*

" It is a real pleasure to be able to recommend this work heartily."—*Privat Schoolmaster.*

ADVANCED ENGLISH SYNTAX. By C. T. ONIONS M.A. Lond., of the Staff of the Oxford English Dictionary. Second Edition, revised, 2s. 6d.

" To our thinking ,the most attractive and useful volume yet contributed to the ' Parallel Grammar Series '. . . . [The] sections on Parataxis and Hypotaxis are particularly instructive and happily treated. . . . It has strong claims to a place on the shelves of every teacher of English who really takes an interest in his subject."—*Guardian.*

" We must admit that this book is, in many respects, an admirable work, and one that many teachers might derive much benefit from.   We do not know of any other work published in England which gives so complete, and, in many respects, so good, an account of English syntax."—*Secondary Education.*

ENGLISH EXAMPLES AND EXERCISES. Part I., by Miss M. A. WOODS. 1s. Part II , by Miss A. J. COOPER, F.C.P. 1s.

" The definitions are terse and clear, and the examples, of which there are a great number, seem to be skilfully selected."—*University Correspondent.*

" The collection of examples for analysis (Part II.), by Miss Cooper, will be a most effective instrument in the hands of any teacher of English."—*Education.*

STEPS TO ENGLISH PARSING AND ANALYSIS. By Miss
E. M. RAMSAY and Miss C. L. RAMSAY. Vol. I., *Elementary*,
1*s.* 6*d.* Vol. II., *Further Exercises.* 1*s.* 6*d.*

" An admirable collection of exercises constructed on principles the practice
of which means the destruction of learning grammar by rote."—*Glasgow Herald.*

" May do much to introduce more satisfactory methods for the early teaching
of English."—*Modern Languages.*

" Cannot fail to aid in achieving the chief end of education—the development
of the learner's intelligence."—*Literary World.*

" A class that had worked through this book would find Latin prose much
easier than when taught in the ordinary way."—*Preparatory Schools' Review.*

" A carefully designed and thoughtfully written manual, which can be
honestly recommended."—*The Teacher's Aid.*

" Many of the stories are intrinsically interesting and may render the
associations of grammar more pleasant than some children find them."—*School-master.*

" Carefully graded to suit the pupil's progress."—*Educational Review.*

FRENCH.

FRENCH GRAMMAR. By L. M. MORIARTY, M.A., Oxon.,
Assistant Master at Harrow ; late Professor of French in King's
College, London. 3*s.*, or (separately), *Accidence,* 1*s.* 6*d.* ; *Syntax,*
1*s.* 6*d.*

" Especial praise must be given to Prof. Moriarty's thoughtful and original
book on French Accidence. It has the merit of being the first French Grammar
for English use that puts the use of the '*Conditional*' in its true light."—H.
BRADLEY (*Academy*).

" Mr. Moriarty's application of the Parallel Grammar programme to French
is carried out in a masterly fashion."—*Journal of Education.*

" We have tested the rules and index by every means known to us, and they
have stood the test exceedingly well."—*Guardian.*

" Commends itself by the admirable clearness of every part ; the best results
may be confidently expected."—*Glasgow Herald.*

PREPARATORY FRENCH COURSE. By Miss A. M. ZWEIFEL,
1*s.* 6*d.* New edition, revised and largely re-written, 1903.

" A capital book for beginners. . . . The exercises form connected narratives
—a decidedly good feature—and the grammatical facts selected are suited to the
capacities of young learners."—*Guardian.*

" The lessons seem characterised by clearness of principle, careful graduation
of matter, and fulness of exercises."—*Schoolmaster.*

" The work of an able teacher."—*Modern Languages.*

" Cannot fail to be of the greatest utility."—*Glasgow Herald.*

FIRST FRENCH READER AND WRITER. By R. J. Morich, late Assistant Master at Clifton, and W. S. Lyon, M.A., Oxon. 2s.

☞ **For Revised Edition of this Work, see below.**

" To say that it is the best with which we are acquainted would be less than fair to it, for it would imply a comparison, whereas it stands alone, and has the merit of introducing a system so natural, and so evidently the best, that one can only wonder that it has never been worked out before."—*Glasgow Herald.*

Just published.—NEW FIRST FRENCH READER AND WRITER. By Professor R. J. Morich, University of Graz. 2s

SECOND FRENCH READER AND WRITER. By Professor P. E. E. Barbier, University College, Cardiff. 2s.

" The plan [of basing exercises in writing upon the subject matter and vocabulary of the Reader] is one which cannot be too highly recommended."—*Guardian.*

" The Writer consists of simple sentences founded on the Reader, a plan of which we have often expressed our approval."—*Journal of Education.*

" The somewhat complicated task of blending grammar, translation and composition together has been ably performed by M. Barbier, whose little volume we warmly recommend as an excellent exponent of an intelligent system." - *Glasgow Herald.*

THIRD FRENCH READER AND WRITER. By L. Barbé, B.A., Headmaster of the Modern Language Department in the Glasgow Academy. 2s.

" The passages are skilfully selected to illustrate special points of Syntax explained in the Grammar."—*Guardian.*

" M. Barbé has performed his task in a very satisfactory way."—*Scholastic Globe.*

" A well-selected series of most interesting extracts from the best modern authors. The English extracts for translation into French are exceedingly skilful adaptations."—*Glasgow Herald.*

Just published.—ADVANCED FRENCH COMPOSITION. By H. E. Berthon, Hon. M.A., Oxon., Taylorian Teacher of French in the University of Oxford, and C. T. Onions, M.A., Lond. 2s. 6d.

GERMAN.

GERMAN GRAMMAR. By Prof. Kuno Meyer, Ph.D., University of Liverpool. 3s.; or (separately), *Accidence*, 1s. 6d.; *Syntax*, 1s. 6d.

"Clear, precise and practical, and very inviting to the eye."—*Journal of Education.*

"Uniformly good."—*Education.*

"The *German Syntax* is an excellent and scholarly piece of work."—*Guardian.*

"Great care has evidently been bestowed on the *Accidence*."—The late Professor H. Nettleship (*Athenæum*).

"Dr. Meyer ist mit seiner Arbeit aus der grossen Masse unverdaulicher deutscher Schulbücher für Engländer einen tüchtigen Schritt hervorgetreten."—*Im Ausland.*

FIRST GERMAN READER AND WRITER. By the Editor of the Series. 1s. 6d.

"It would be difficult to give too high praise to this book as a book for *young* beginners. In method, arrangement, selection of pieces, and in clearness of print, it is just what an elementary Reader and exercise book should be. We know several teachers who are using it, and who entirely endorse our opinion."—*Modern Language Monthly.*

"An admirable bit of work, the pieces chosen being all very simple without being dull or foolish."—*Journal of Education.*

"Fulfils in almost every respect the conditions of a perfect class book for junior pupils in German."—*Practical Teacher.*

SECOND GERMAN READER AND WRITER. By the Rev. W. S. Macgowan, M.A., LL.D., Principal of St. Andrew's College, Grahamstown, Cape Colony. 2s.

"Dr. Macgowan has done his part with the same thoroughness as Professor Sonnenschein."—*Journal of Education.*

"The plan of these Readers and Writers has our entire approval."—*Guardian.*

"There can be no doubt whatever that it (retranslation) materially assists the learner, especially when it is practised in so clear and skilful a way as in this book."—*Education.*

THIRD GERMAN READER AND WRITER. By Prof. Georg Fiedler, Ph.D., University of Birmingham. 2s.

"Sure to be welcomed by teachers and pupils alike, for it will lessen the labour of both, without, in any sense, encouraging careless or slovenly work."—*Glasgow Herald.*

"Fully worthy to take a place in this admirable series."—*Modern Languages.*

"The English-German Vocabulary is written on very sensible lines, and at once commends itself."—*Guardian.*

"An additional advantage is that all the passages refer to matters of German history or legend, thus, in some degree, interesting the student in the history as well as the language of Germany."—*Bookseller.*

"A well-designed course."—*Scotsman.*

FOURTH GERMAN WRITER. By R. GORDON ROUTH, M.A., Oxon., Modern Language Master in Bromsgrove School. 2s.

"This text-book appears in the well-known *Parallel Grammar Series.* The passages are, on the whole, well chosen, and are for the most part of an historical nature. We have nothing but praise for this well-planned text-book."—*Teacher's Aid.*

In preparation.—**ADVANCED GERMAN COMPOSITION.** By Prof. KUNO MEYER, Ph.D., University of Liverpool.

SPANISH, WELSH, DANO-NORWEGIAN.

SPANISH GRAMMAR. By H. BUTLER CLARKE, M.A., Oxon., Fellow of St. John's College, Oxford, late Taylorian Teacher of Spanish. 4s. 6d.

"These books follow the admirable plan laid down for this series by Professor E. A. Sonnenschein. They are thoroughly and carefully done, and will prove of the highest service."—*Scotsman.*

"Altogether it would be difficult to find two better books to put into the hands of a learner."—*Glasgow Herald.*

"The well-known method of the series is faithfully adhered to throughout these works, which are likely to prove serviceable for private students as well as for schools."—*Daily Chronicle.*

FIRST SPANISH READER AND WRITER. By H. BUTLER CLARKE, M.A. 2s.

"For this book we have nothing but praise."—*Literary World.*

WELSH GRAMMAR. By Prof. E. ANWYL, M.A., Oxon., University College, Aberystwyth. 5s.; or (separately), *Accidence,* 2s. 6d.; *Syntax,* 2s. 6d.

"To look for defects in the work of such a capable man as the author is a hopeless task. . . . The work is as perfect as any grammar can well be, and students of Welsh in our secondary schools and colleges will hail its appearance with sincere gratification."—*Western Mail (Leading Article).*

"It seems very clear as well as concise."—D. B. MONRO, M.A., Provost of Oriel College, Oxford.

"It seems to me to be most scholarly, and will give a great impetus to the scientific teaching and understanding of Welsh."—T. E. ELLIS, M.P.

FIRST WELSH READER. By Prof. E. ANWYL, M.A., and Rev. M. H JONES. 2s. 6d.

DANO-NORWEGIAN READER. With Grammatical Outline. By J. Y. SARGENT, M.A., Oxon., late Fellow and Tutor of Magdalen College, Oxford. 3s. 6d.

'The prose pieces have been selected with much care and judgment, and the English version is both literal and accurate. . . . Altogether the book seems admirably fitted to fulfil its object, and may be safely recommended."—*Guardian.*
" English students of Danish and Norwegian will find their efforts greatly lightened by this book."—*Liverpool Post.*
" A good idea well carried out."—*Educational Review.*

☞ Single Copies of any volume will be sent post free to any teacher on receipt of half its published price. KEYS to the Latin and German Readers and Writers may be had by teachers on direct application to the publishers.

1905